

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 952 A Fork and a Rattle Drum - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 952 A Fork and a Rattle Drum

Chapter 952 A Fork and a Rattle Drum

Su Ming swung his left hand, and Dao Avenue Mountain immediately enlarged endlessly. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a mountain of ten thousand feet, and when Su Ming lifted it, he threw it before himself.

The mountain immediately created a loud bang as it broke space and charged towards the middle-aged man.

It was so quick that in the blink of an eye, it was already near that person.

"You still don't understand the rise and fall of Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death." The middle-aged man shook his head and raised his right hand to swing it against the incoming Dao Avenue Mountain.

"The rise and fall of fate happens with just a single thought of mine. Fate exists in every single thing in the world, just like this mountain rock... It is connected to you through fate, which is why it was obtained by you, but if I say this fate will be cut off from you... then it will be cut off," the middle-aged man said flatly before he swung his arm. Dao Avenue Mountain then came to an abrupt halt in front of him.

Su Ming's pupils shrank. He immediately saw endless thin threads around Dao Avenue Mountain. These threads were connected to him, but when the middle-aged man swung his sleeve, they were all snapped.

As the threads were cut, Su Ming's body swayed, and a feeling of emptiness instantly rose in his heart. His connection with Dao Avenue Mountain had been cut!

This was not a simple act of taking away Su Ming's Enchanted Treasure. It was just as the man had said, he had cut off Dao Avenue Mountain's fate with Su Ming, causing them to no longer be connected through fate, and Su Ming would never be able to possess it again, unless he did something about it.

"This is the rise and fall of fate. Search for your next master."

The middle-aged man's voice echoed in space. Dao Avenue Mountain shuddered, but right at the instant it was about to disappear, Su Ming raised his right leg and stepped on the galaxy. The galaxy shuddered, and the disappearing Dao Avenue Mountain was bounced back, returning from its dissipating state.

"You should have fought against a Master of Fate before, I wonder how that person gave you the confidence... to fight against a Master of Fate with brute force?" The middle-aged man smiled. There was a hint of derision in it.

"You will not be able to enter the area one hundred thousand feet around me, because that is where the connection of our fate ends."

Once the middle-aged man said that, Su Ming's expression changed. He sensed an indescribable power erupting from space, and with it, he was forced back, pushed from his previous position of only several tens of thousands of feet away from the middle-aged man to a hundred thousand feet. After that, he had a strong feeling that he... could not step into that area.

It was as if there was a law in there that could not be expelled.

This was completely different from Su Ming's first fight against a Master of Fate. In fact, even though he sensed that this person was slightly weaker than the Master of Fate he had met in the past, he had a feeling that he absolutely could not strike back right now.

'Fate...' Su Ming's heart trembled. He suddenly understood something.

He realized why Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death were known as Masters of Fate by others!

They controlled other people's fates, and only when they had control over the fates of the whole world and universe could they be known as... Masters of Fate!

Su Ming's eyes shone. When he clenched his right hand, the mountain rock in it shone with a piercing white light. As it did so, Su Ming's power of Divine Essence fused into him, causing the mountain rock to become tens of thousands of feet big. Once it did, an enraged howl echoed in space, and the mountain rock turned into a loud bang.

It was a pity that the threads of fate connecting him to Dao Avenue Mountain were cut, but at least Malicious Spirit Weighing the Elephant, was still with him. However, as the elephant roared and rushed into the area of one hundred thousand feet... it shuddered and started shrinking rapidly before Su Ming's eyes, until it turned back into the mountain rock. The endless threads connected faintly to Su Ming then were also swiftly cut.

"You dare fight against me with just these?" As the middle-aged man asked this flatly, he raised his right hand and pointed at Su Ming.

"I see that you have three bodies, and thus have three fates. I will now cut your fate to your cultivation base!"

Once he said these words, Su Ming shuddered, for an intense pain rose in his soul. It was a feeling of being torn apart, as if his body was being forcefully ripped apart by an indescribable power which wanted to tear away his cultivation base clone that had fused with him. Once it was torn away from him, then Su Ming's cultivation base clone would be like his Enchanted Treasures and become an independent existence. He would no longer have any control over it.

Purple light shone brilliantly in Su Ming's eyes, and as his body shuddered, overlapping shadows appeared around his cultivation base clone, as if it was about to be ripped apart.

The middle-aged man smiled, and he pointed at Su Ming again. "I will cut your fate to your physical body."

A loud bang shot up in Su Ming's mind. Overlapping shadows also appeared around his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. The connection he had with it started showing signs of being torn apart as the middle-aged man declared to cut his fate with it.

A brilliant light shone in the middle-aged man's eyes. He raised his right hand and cut down swiftly in Su Ming's direction through space. "And I will also cut your fate... with your Ecang clone!"

Bang!

The clones fell in three different directions. When Su Ming saw that they were about to be torn from him, expressions of intense pain appeared on all three of the clones' faces.

Su Ming even had the feeling that his will was about to be torn into three. If that really happened, then he would become three independent entities, and by then, he would have lost his true self.

In fact, even his memories were being ripped apart, which brought them up to the front of his mind. These memories were shattering, but Su Ming did not panic. He had a way to resolve this danger, and the easiest way to do so was the summoning of the Sand Spirit. This was part of the plan, but he did not do so, because when his memories were being torn, he remembered a particular Art he had learned when he was in Dark Mountain.

When Su Ming remembered this Art, he suddenly gained an epiphany.

.....

While Su Ming was in danger, far away from Divine Essence Star Ocean and the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... war engulfed True Morning Dao World.

Within True Morning Dao Sect was a lofty altar. It was located at the center and had nothing on it, but for single crack on its surface.

This was an incredibly ordinary place in Morning Dao Sect, since there were plenty of such altars in Morning Dao Sect. No one knew what purpose they served, but the ancestors had left instructions that no one was allowed to step into Morning Dao Sect's altars.

There were around ninety-seven thousand such altars, and there was an equivalent number of cracks. Only the ancient existences within Morning Dao Sect knew that these cracks were existences akin to coordinates.

When they were connected together, they would turn into a set that would point... to the isolation grounds of Kalpa Lord Dao Chen, the Progenitor of the entire True Morning Dao World.

That isolation grounds was a fragmented void connected to the entire space of Morning Dao World. It was a fault dimension . Besides those in True Morning Dao World, no one knew just how it looked like.

Kalpa Lord Dao Chen had been in isolated training for a long, long time...

If Su Ming could stand on one of the altars and execute the full power of his Malicious Eye... No, he would need a power that surpassed his current level of cultivation. Only when he became a Master of Fate and used his Malicious Eye would he be able to see... that there were endless cracks in space within the altar's crack. If his gaze could pierce through all of them and connect them together, he would be able to see a door.

Behind that door was a dimension that existed in space, and it was the dimension where Dao Chen isolated himself.

At that moment, there was a large amount of white fog in that dimension. Within its depths was a person. He was sitting cross-legged in there with his head lowered. His entire body was surrounded by fog, making it impossible to see his face clearly. There was no life force on him, only stillness.

Placed before him were two items. One of them was a fork, and the other a child's toy - a rattle drum.

At that moment, the rattle drum was shivering. In fact, some cracks could be seen on it. Those cracks continued spreading, as if preparing to shatter that rattle drum.

It could not be seen whether the person sitting in the fog opened their eyes, but it could be seen that as the cracks on the rattle drum appeared, the body, which seemed to not have moved for a long time, shuddered, and the person raised their right hand slowly.

Once the person did this, an endless amount of booms immediately rang in the dimension. In fact, those booms even affected the world outside, causing a galactic windstorm throughout the entire True Morning Dao World.

The windstorm swept through whole land, shocking all the people fighting against each other, stunning both Morning Dao Sect and the entire Immortals' Union. This galactic windstorm caused the entire True Morning Dao World to seem like a bottle that was swaying about violently.

This was not the first time a windstorm like this had appeared. It was... the second time!

The first time was one thousand something years ago. No one knew why that windstorm had appeared, and several breaths after it did, it disappeared on its own, becoming a mystery that countless people tried to figure out, but could not.

Now, one thousand something years later, the windstorm appeared once more.

No one knew that its cause was the figure in the fragmented dimension, who had brought about this phenomenon with the wind he stirred up when he raised his hand. The figure was slowly lifting their hand, looking as if they intended to touch the shattering rattle drum.

But before the hand could touch it, the cracks on it no longer continued spreading, but instead moved in reverse and closed up on their own, causing the figure's hand to pause in midair.

The figure could be seen smiling then. That expression was incredibly amiable, but there was a hint... of guilt in it.

.....

As the three clones were being forcefully torn from Su Ming's soul in Divine Essence Star Ocean, he raised his head, and at the instant the light of understanding shone in his eyes, the process of him being torn stopped for a moment.

"I have indeed been careless about a Master of Fate's strength and overestimated myself... but this battle also let me understand what it means to control fate!

"It means to control the fate of all the living in the universe... but while other people's fate might be easy to control, controlling your own fate is the hardest. You... can control the fate of the entire universe, but you cannot control your own fate.

"This is why you did not seem as strong as that person I met in the past." As Su Ming raised his head, he lifted his right hand. "This battle also allowed me to understand an Art I learned when I was a child and why it left a deep impression on me. Every single

time I thought about it, I found it difficult to figure out, because the Art I learned in the past was not any normal Art. It was... an Art of Masters of Fate."

While enduring the intense pain, Su Ming raised his right hand. He then slashed down at the middle-aged man one hundred thousand feet away from him.

"Execution... of the Three Evils!"

1. Fault dimension: Fault here is a geology term, and the idea to translate 断层空间 (duan4 ceng2 kong1 jian1) as fault dimension came from fault rock, since 断层 is a fault.

Chapter 953 Slashing Fate!

Execution of Three Evils, an Art which could even kill Tai Sui!

The three evils were also known as the three murders.

Between heaven and earth, there were three forces - Sever, Beginning, and Nurture. Sever was known as the evil of theft, Beginning was known as the evil of disaster, and Nurture was the evil of time!

They were also known as the murders of theft, disaster, and time!

This was the Execution of Three Evils Su Ming had learned when he was in Dark Mountain.

Su Ming had used this Art in the past to break the divine ability his elder had placed in the house to lock him up when he was in Wind Stream Tribe. He brought forth the power of murder of theft and broke the screen of light that sealed him in the house. That was the first time he had used the Execution of Three Evils.

At that time, he had not understood the fundamentals of this Art.

The final time he executed this Art had been in the land of Shamans. When he opened the gap to the mountain, he lured in the miasma in the area and turned it to Yin Aura, causing the corner of the mountain range to seem like a breathing dragon. Because of it, he changed the pattern in the area and brought about the power of the murder of disaster to the area, laying down a Rune formed out of nature itself.

Su Ming had executed the Art after he had gained a deeper understanding towards the Execution of Three Evils.

Now, Su Ming cast this Art once again in Divine Essence Star Ocean. But this time, he had come to truly understand this Art. It was not a normal Art... but a Master of Fate's Art!

This Art could cut the laws of heaven, could change the patterns of the world, could disrupt the harmony between Yin and Yang, could overturn the universe, could go up against the heavens... The core of this divine ability was in truth using the slashes contained within the Art to eventually separate a person's kismet and fate from the galaxy itself.

Once all of a person's connections to the universe were separated and they became an isolated, lonely presence, Su Ming could make it so that the person would seem to have lost their eyes and roots, so that they would not be able to exist harmoniously with the universe.

It would be as if he had separated the person from his fate, causing him to be unable to control it. Hence, it would perhaps be more accurate to say that the Execution of Three Evils more apt name would be Execution of Three Fates!

"You only managed to control the fate that lies around me, but you can't control my personal fate, that is why..." Su Ming lifted his head and stared at Heaven Traversers' Progenitor with understanding in his eyes. His expression was calm. Even though the overlapping shadows of his clones were still being torn from him, this pain was something Su Ming could ignore.

Because he had found the strongest Art buried in his memories among his divine abilities through this battle. As Su Ming swung his right hand down in a slash, he took a step forward. At the same time, the ends of his hair started to turn white.

"This is the Realm that belongs to a Master of Fate. Fate is law. With my first slash, I will cut the evil of theft and have it fuse with the universe. Fate will act as its guide. If there is no fate, then the evil of disaster will not exist in the universe. There is a connection between fate and theft, and now... I will cut your fate with the universe!"

The galaxy roared. The expression of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor changed for the first time. When Su Ming executed his first slash, ripples that surged into the heavens rose around Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. These ripples continued spreading outwards, making it seem as if endless threads had appeared around him. These threads were all in the form of rings and were spreading outwards continuously, looking like waves.

The fate in the universe Su Ming had cut off was the law of fate connecting Heaven Traversers' Progenitor with the universe. He could see clearly that there seemed to be an invisible blade around Heaven Traversers' Progenitor that was swinging down and cutting all the threads. In the blink of an eye, as the blade swept through the area, the galaxy tumbled and fell backwards like waves.

At that moment, Su Ming finished taking his first step and stepped into the area seventy thousand feet away from the Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. The Progenitor's expression changed, and a third of Su Ming's hair turned white, but he did not stop. He took his second step and moved forward once more.

"With my second slash, I will cut the evil of disaster. Disaster stays in earth and comes from the ground. It originates from the spot beneath our feet and is hidden in space. With this slash... I will cut your fate with space!" Su Ming raised his right hand, and without any hesitation, he executed his second slash.

The galaxy immediately swayed intensely, as if the universe had been overturned and the cosmos were going through a transformation. All laws and rules dissipated within a moment. Numerous ripples appeared in the space under the feet of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor again, but when Su Ming executed his second slash, these ripples shattered, as if the connection between Heaven Traversers' Progenitor and space had been cut.

The fate of the universe and the fate of space might seem like abstract concepts, but in truth, the cosmos were formed from endless universes and spaces. When these two fates were cut, it would mean that... Su Ming had segregated Heaven Traversers' Progenitor from the galaxy in the area, causing him to lose his connection with it in this place.

This was Heaven Traversers' galaxy, so all the cultivation planets here as well as the galaxy here had acknowledged them. Su Ming's actions thus had forcefully cut off this acknowledgement and this law of fate.

At that moment, Su Ming finished taking his second step and stepped into the area thirty thousand feet away from Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. A two thirds of his hair then had turned white, and the ancient air about him was incredibly distinct. All of this might have seemed to have occurred over a long period of time, but in truth, when it happened, it only lasted for a few breaths before it was over.

"With my third slash, I will cut the evil of time. I will cut your fate with the galaxy. You still have the concept of time in your head, and because of it, your shadow will last in the passage of time in this place. If time has a spirit, then everything about you will exist within the memories of this spirit. With this slash, I will cut off your fate with time!"

At the instant Su Ming lifted his foot swiftly to take his third step, the galaxy looked as if it had been overturned. Heaven Traversers' Progenitor threw his head back and let out a furious roar. This sound was astonishingly loud, and it shook Su Ming so much that he coughed up blood, but it did not manage to prevent him from taking that last step forward and slashing down the third time with his right hand.

Slash!

The universe changed. A cyclone centered around Heaven Traversers' Progenitor swept outwards with a loud bang. The galaxy where that cyclone passed through looked as if it was suffering from time reversal, all of its memories being wiped off. Once the cyclone disappeared, the shadow of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor no longer existed in the passages of time in the spot where the Progenitor stood, and the connection between the galaxy and the Progenitor could no longer be found.

Su Ming's Execution of Three Evils was not aimed at Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, but the universe, the galaxy, space, and time. That was why Heaven Traversers' Progenitor could not fight against it. In fact, the divine ability Su Ming executed at that moment was one that the Progenitor had never seen before; it was the first time he saw the likes of it. In fact, from this divine ability, he sensed two emotions that had been long absent from his life - fear and wariness!

What Su Ming had cut was the passage of time in the galaxy, but he also indirectly cut... the fate of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor!

Bang!

When Su Ming took his third step, his hair turned completely white, and some signs of time appeared on his face, but the overlapping shadows of the three clones on his body disappeared and returned to their original state. He stood at a spot nearly a thousand feet away from Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, and as his foot landed, Su Ming raised his right hand before he hurled a punch through the air in the direction of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor.

This was a punch delivered by his cultivation base clone, his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole, and his Ecang clone. At the instant it came hurling forward, Ecang's projection manifested behind Su Ming. Booming sounds shot up, shaking the sky and earth and causing the galaxy to tremble. A large number of cracks appeared in it as the punch charged swiftly towards Heaven Traversers' Progenitor.

Before, the Progenitor hadn't even needed to attack. With just the use of words and the power of the fate's law in the universe as well as all manner of living, he had been able to render Su Ming almost completely unable to fight back. Now, the Progenitor spotted a change in his expression. He raised his right hand, then swung it in Su Ming's direction, who was coming towards him with his fist in the air.

With it, an incredibly large palm appeared in front of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor while the universe roared. That palm stood vertically in the galaxy, and as if it was being pushed forward, it charged towards Su Ming. Wherever it passed through, the galaxy would be broken. In the blink of an eye, it crashed against Su Ming's punch.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Deafening sounds rang in space. Su Ming coughed up blood. Once he staggered several tens of thousands of feet backwards, he coughed up blood again, but there was a ferocious smile on his lips, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

As for Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, his expression was as dark as a swamp. He might not even be swaying, but from the expressions of both his and Su Ming's faces, it was clear that he... was at a disadvantage!

Because he could no longer use fate and was forced to use the power of a Master of Fate to force Su Ming back. This was the same as someone sealing up his divine abilities and making him fight only using his physical strength.

A runic symbol had appeared at the center of his brows. This runic symbol looked as if it was branded on his forehead. It did not appear just then, but it chose this moment to manifest. However, this runic symbol was dull and lusterless. Su Ming could see countless threads floating around it, trying to connect with the threads of the universe, galaxy and the passage of time Su Ming had cut off just then. But the separation between it and the galaxy caused it... to be unable to connect with those threads.

This item was incredibly discordant with Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, as if it had been forcefully branded to the center of his brows. Clearly... this was not something that came from the Progenitor himself, but was a treasure from an external source.

In truth, he had only completed a small part of the Mastery Realm and could not compare to the person Su Ming met in the past, who had fully completed the Mastery Realm. The Progenitor had been able to step into the Fate Realm because of this item, which allowed him to control the fate of the universe and all manner of living.

However, by doing so, his level of cultivation came to a stop, and he would never be able to control his own fate like the truly powerful warriors who had completed the Fate Realm. If he had been able to control his own fate, Su Ming would not have been able to cut the law of fate around him with the current Execution of Three Evils.

"This is your true power, it is also the reason why you were more difficult to deal with even though you gave me a feeling that you were weaker than the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death I met in the past."

Su Ming wiped off the blood at the corners of his mouth. Without bothering about his white hair, he said flatly while standing tens of thousands of feet away, "How does it feel like to have the laws of fate cut from you?"

"I underestimated you. This Art created to specifically cut fate is incredibly rare... and can only be executed after you offer up your life force. When you executed it, you must have lost quite a large amount of your life force. But... even so, with the supreme power I possess in Mastery Realm, I can still kill you."

The killing intent in the eyes of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor grew incredibly strong. At that moment, he no longer regarded Su Ming with the same scorn and inattentiveness as he did moments ago. Instead, he looked at Su Ming as an equal, and an incredible amount of greed also rose in his heart.

He knew well just how rare the divine abilities to cut fate were in the world, and the Art Su Ming executed just then was one he had never seen before. This caused him to be unable to help but desire to possess that Art.

He took a step forward. His supreme physical power burst forth from his body, and it could be said that the body of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor reached a state where he would not be destroyed if the world did not perish, and where he could not fall into decay if the universe did not rot.

1. Mastery Realm, Fate Realm, Life Realm, and Death Realm: Mastery Realm is Mastery Realm. There is no short form for it. It's the first Realm for the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

Fate Realm is the Rise and Fall of Fate.

Life Realm is Reincarnation of Life, not Life Cultivation Realm, they are two completely different Realms.

Death Realm is Death of the Universe.

Chapter 954 I Want to Fight!

'This is what it means to be a Master of Fate... There must be detailed categorizations in this great Realm. It can even be said that being able to control fate and being unable to control fate are two different realms, even though they are still Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!

'The existence I met in the past acting as a garrison to the four Great True Worlds could cover an endless stretch of galaxy and chase me down until I returned to the foreign land. Clearly, he displayed an unimaginably powerful physical strength.

'But he did not understand the laws of fate. If that is the case, then I understand it now. The main focus of that Realm is mastery, which is why he could be known as someone who had completed the Mastery Realm.

'This Heaven Traversers' Progenitor used that supreme treasure at the center of his brows to forcefully control the fate around him, but his true power is really just in the Mastery Realm, and he's not as powerful as the one I met in the past either. He had only completed a small part of the Mastery Realm.

'If I separate it this way, then I can understand what it means to be a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. The Mastery Realm exists within this state, and this Realm is the pinnacle of physical power. If someone can reach a breakthrough, then they will be able to step into the Fate Realm. To complete this Realm, you would need to control your own fate.

'Because of that, there is certainly a Life Realm and a final Death Realm as well. Only those who complete the Death Realm could be truly known as... Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!' The light of understanding shone in Su Ming's eyes.

'It's worth it... to learn about these and understand the true method of using the Execution of Three Evils!' Su Ming glanced at Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, who was taking big strides towards him with a presence as if he was looking down on the world, with a cold glare. He raised his right hand slowly.

'Now, I want to see just how great the difference is... between me, after I fused with all three of my clones, and you, who has completed a small part of the Mastery Realm, Heaven Traversers' Progenitor!' When Su Ming lifted his head, he clenched his right hand into a fist. He did not retreat but instead charged forward, turning into a long arc that rushed towards Heaven Traversers' Progenitor.

Ecang's projection manifested behind him. As the galaxy shook violently. A vast aura erupted from Su Ming's body with a bang, and he drew increasingly closer to Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. In the blink of an eye, the two of them crashed into each other, and each of them threw a punch forward.

The Progenitor was in Mastery Realm. Without using divine abilities and Arts, he raised his hand, and brought forth a supreme physical power!

Bang!

A loud bang shook the universe and echoed all around. Su Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood and staggered backwards continuously, while the Ecang tree swayed intensely. Even after Su Ming was forced several thousands of feet back, he did not stop, and at that moment, killing intent shone in the eyes of the Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. With a cold harrumph, he walked forward once more.

He might seem calm, but his heart was filled with shock. He might have only used a fifth of his strength in the punch he threw just then, but that fifth was enough to kill all those in Solar Kalpa Realm.

In fact, it could even break apart all divine abilities cast by those in Solar Kalpa Realm and then kill them without being bothered by them.

However, when the punch landed on Su Ming's body, it only caused him to cough up blood, shattered his organs, and forced him back. To the Heaven Traversers'

Progenitor, this was something he did not want to accept. The killing intent in his heart grew even stronger. No one would want his own race to have such a powerful enemy lurking around alive.

This was why when the Progenitor took that step forward, he raised his right hand, and this time, he used all his strength, intending to finish this battle with one punch. He was so quick that his attack arrived before Su Ming could even regain his footing. When the Progenitor threw his punch outwards, the universe roared, and an indescribable power erupted from the fist.

The galaxy quivered. In fact, all the cultivation planets in the galaxy trembled at this moment. Even the four cultivators who were a distance away from the place shuddered as they charged forward. They turned their heads around swiftly, and shock appeared on their faces.

If anyone lowered their heads from the highest place in the galaxy to look down at that moment, they would be able to see that the galaxy had turned into a gigantic fist. As it stirred a rumble, it charged towards Su Ming.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, the moment Heaven Traversers' Progenitor threw his fist forward, it closed in on its target.

Su Ming's pupils shrank. A life-threatening sense of danger instantly filled his entire body. At that moment, the most logical course of action for him was to instantly execute the next part of his plan to avoid this life-threatening crisis.

But Su Ming did not do so. A monstrous fighting spirit rose in his eyes, and his rationality was replaced by impulsiveness, a sight rarely seen on him. This impulsiveness was not recklessness, but a fighting spirit so great that he could not control it.

He wanted to fight. Even if this person was a cultivator in Mastery Realm, he still wanted to fight!

Even if his body and spirit would be destroyed, he had a fighting spirit in him that urged him to throw a punch forward as well, to fight against the punch the Progenitor had thrown towards him. The intensity of that emotion caused Su Ming's eyes to become bloodshot. It made him lift his head and roar towards the heaven. Something within him was screaming that even if he died, he still had to personally face the Progenitor and learn how strong were the people in Mastery Realm.

'I already fled once in the face of someone in Mastery Realm... This time, I will not run. I will fight!' Su Ming clenched his right hand into a fist. The fighting spirit within him grew to a monstrous degree, stimulating the will to never give in within Su Ming.

Death might be frightening, but Su Ming believed that escapism was even more terrifying. He wanted to fight, wanted to throw his fist forward and not think about the consequences or whether he would die. All of these thoughts gathered in his fist. He had a strong feeling that if he could successfully land this punch and not die, then his state of mind would rise once again, and even his soul would become stronger.

It would be as if he had broken some sort of seal, some sort limit. That would be... a metamorphosis in his state of life .

"I want to fight!"

Su Ming raised his right hand. His expression was ferocious, and his eyes were bloodshot.

"I want to fight!"

He swung his right fist forward, and the Ecang projection behind him swiftly gained corporeal form, as if a formless vortex had appeared on Su Ming's right hand, guiding the gigantic Ecang projection behind him into it.

"I WANT TO FIGHT!!!"

Su Ming threw his head back and roared. At the instant he threw his fist forward, his body disappeared, replaced by a gigantic tree. This was a tree with a size that was unmatched by anyone, and it was currently twisting about. All of its branches tangled with each other and turned into a huge fist, crashing in an instant against the galactical punch that was the Progenitor's attack.

Bang! Bang!

A deafening sound that could not be described with words echoed in the galaxy and throughout all the hundred something cultivation planets within it. It reverberated through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean in this area and caused the blood to pour out of the eyes, ears, nose, and mouth of the four cultivators in the distance. Their bodies shook so much that their organs were in intense pain.

The Ecang tree disintegrated...

It turned into countless wooden splinters that crumbled apart. As they did so, Su Ming was revealed within. Overlapping shadows appeared on his body, and his cultivation base clone was the first to be expelled from him while falling backwards.

Soon after, his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole also separated from him as the overlapping shadows appeared around his body, and he fell a hundred thousand feet backwards.

Under the Progenitor's full power strike, the fusion of the three clones was broken, and they were forced apart. All three of Su Ming's clones coughed up a large mouthful of blood at the same time, and as their faces turned pale, they staggered.

But... he did not die!

Because most of the impact of the force was canceled by his Ecang clone, and Ecang was a life form written in the ballad. It was an eternal being. This sort of grievous injury was not enough to kill it.

The Progenitor's face turned dark. He stood in his place and did not even sway, but only he knew that the little finger on his right hand had become numb for a single breath when his punch collided against Su Ming's fist.

It might have been just one breath, but in his understanding, this was impossible. He was almighty in Mastery Realm, and the Mastery Realm was the symbol of supreme physical power in the universe, a wall that was impossible to be shaken by cultivators who were weaker than him.

However... the numb sensation during that moment just then was real. It was as if a crack had appeared on a sturdy wall, and Progenitor's killing intent grew even stronger when he looked at Su Ming.

"Today, you are going to die!"

The eyes of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor shone with killing intent, and he took a step once more. This time, he executed power that surpassed the full force of what he could muster. It was the first time he brought forth this strongest power within him after he became a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

As he moved forward, the galaxy cracked and shattered, a sign that it could no longer bear his existence.

Su Ming smiled. He wiped the blood off the corners of his mouth, and the three clones instantly fused together once more. This time, he did not continue fighting but instead immediately retreated.

His action fell into the eyes of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, and he laughed coldly in his heart. If there was someone he wanted to kill in Divine Essence Star Ocean, that person would not be able to escape.

However, Su Ming's subsequent action made the Progenitor's pupils shrink.

Su Ming raised his right hand and swung it forward.

"Sand Spirit, my first request for you is to kill this person! If you can't kill him, then trap him for a month!"

When he said these words, the Progenitor's expression changed drastically. He sensed a vast power surging forward from the galaxy all around him. He was rather familiar with this power, and it made him think of far too many things.

As his expression changed, he took a step forward and instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already behind Su Ming. He raised his right hand, intending to immediately kill him.

However, just as he was about to throw his fist against Su Ming's back, who did not even attempt to dodge, a layer of thin sand appeared between his fist and Su Ming's body.

The Progenitor's fist landed on the fine sand with a bang. It rose into space and reverberated continuously. During that moment, the thin sand behind Su Ming turned into a gigantic palm made of sand.

The galaxy trembled, and a gigantic face appeared in space. This face... was that of the Ancestral Spirit of the Sand Earthlings who had destroyed his own kin so that he could obtain a promise to be entered into the ballad!

"The first request... This is an existence who has reached the middle stage of the Mastery Realm. If I was at the peak of my condition, I could kill him, but now... I can only trap him. One month... is possible!"

A muffled hum echoed in the galaxy. The Sand Spirit's gigantic spirit existed in the galaxy, and its boundless body formed an indescribable wave of shock that was powerful enough to tremble the hearts of all those who saw it.

"Ancestral Spirit of the Sand Earthlings! You-you-you were someone who completed the Fate Realm in the past! You haven't died?! I know, you are already half a step into Life Realm, that's why you've obtained a part of eternal life!" The expression of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor instantly changed drastically.

State of life: This is derived from the Buddhists' Ten Worlds, also known as ten conditions or states of life. It is believed that a person moves from one to another through the experiences he/she gains in the world. The Ten Worlds are Hell, Hunger, Animality, Anger, Humanity, Heaven, Learning, Realization, Bodhisattva and Buddhahood.

Chapter 955 It Would Do I

This was Su Ming's plan. He wanted to first fight against a Master of Fate and measure the level of his current combat abilities, search for his direction, and find his breakthrough as he fought against a powerful warrior.

Then, he would make his first request to the Sand Earthling. If the spirit could kill the Master of Fate, that would be good. If he could not, then Su Ming would ask the Sand Earthling to trap him and buy a month's time.

In truth, Su Ming could have asked the Sand Earthling to attack and exterminate all Heaven Traversers for his first request, but after some thought, Su Ming did not choose to do so.

If the Sand Earthling had attacked, not only would it have been held back by Heaven Traversers' Master of Fate when he appeared, what would await Su Ming would still be the same outcome as now.

More importantly, Su Ming wanted to exact revenge, not cause a simple massacre. He wanted all of Heaven Traversers to pay the price for chasing after Tian Xie Zi in the past and make them perish as they escaped.

Perhaps in the eyes of Heaven Traversers, Su Ming's actions were an unpardonable evil, a heinous crime, a deed that would get him punished by the universe. He seemed brutal and merciless. After all, the people who went after Tian Xie Zi's life in the past were the powerful warriors among the Heaven Traversers, not their common people.

However, Su Ming still did it. No matter whether they were powerful warriors of the race or just normal members, they were all Heaven Traversers. Su Ming did not have the distinction between good and evil. The only thing he held true was doing what he believed he should do. When such thoughts appeared in his head, he had to do them, even if those actions were beyond the understanding of those around him and filled with a malicious air as well as could be considered to be temperamental.

However, Su Ming still did them. This was his monomaniacal determination.

He was sagacious, but that sagacity was all set by himself. He also had principles, but similarly, he was the one who set those principles. The core of all of his sagacity and principles was... 'Do not provoke me, do not provoke my friends, do not provoke my family, and do not provoke my Master and my fellow brothers.

'The price those who violate these principles must pay... is the extermination of their entire race!'

Booming sounds echoed through the entire galaxy. They were a loud howl mixed with the furious roars of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. Endless sand surrounded him, and when Su Ming looked over, the Progenitor looked like a ball of madness who was enveloped by a gigantic Sand Earthling.

More sand kept appearing around the Progenitor. After a moment, that sand turned into a gigantic planet, and in its core was Heaven Traversers' Progenitor.

Muffled booms came from the sand planet, but as it grew larger, the sounds were gradually drowned out. The Sand Spirit's body also shrank, and in the end, what appeared before Su Ming was a gigantic planet with an ancient old man sitting on it.

The old man naturally took the form of the Sand Spirit. He sat there as if he was guarding the planet, suppressing Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, who was trapped inside.

The old man who was the Sand Spirit lifted his head to look at Su Ming and said, "I am already declining. My power grows weaker day by day. I can only help you trap this person for a month..."

His tone was faint, as if his presence was slowly atrophying. An archaic presence mixed with a thick aura of death surrounded him.

"One month is enough." Su Ming lowered his head to look at his body. He was heavily injured at that moment, but he had already accepted these injuries, because the benefits surpassed them in value.

He could sense that his soul was going through a metamorphosis and his Ecang clone had understood plenty of things after the battle. His clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole had also seemed to come into touch with a power that existed in the universe and which only those in Mastery Realm could feel.

His cultivation base clone had also obtained a form of enlightenment during that battle.

Yet the most important thing was that Su Ming was no longer afraid of those in the Mastery Realm. This was incredibly important to him, because in the depths of his heart, he could never forget how he had fled when he was within the territory of the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping a lookout over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. The Almighty in Mastery Realm had left behind an impression of his strength and how hard he was to fight deep within Su Ming's heart.

This impression was like a seed. Sometime in the future, it would sprout, and when that time came, Su Ming's level of cultivation would retrogress due to the shoots from the seed binding him.

Yet now, the influence ended due to this battle. It was wiped away from Su Ming's heart!

Su Ming turned around and charged towards the distant galaxy. He did not move further into the Heaven Traversers' territory, but headed to the galaxy beyond it, and he traveled so quickly that he was gone in the blink of an eye.

After a moment, as Su Ming charged through the galaxy, he raised his right arm and swung it in space. Immediately, the totem of the Duke of Crimson Flame on his arm vanished, and the person manifested in front of him. He bowed respectfully towards Su Ming.

"Over the course of the next few days, protect me. Act according to the plan I told you previously," Su Ming said faintly. The Duke of Crimson Flame hesitated for a moment before lowering his head and voicing his obedience.

Then, Su Ming patted his storage bag with his right hand. Two arcs, one yellow and one black, flew out and turned into the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon in front of Su Ming. These two creatures had been locked up in his storage bag for quite some years as a punishment for their deeds in Black Ink Planet.

When they appeared, the bald crane immediately lifted its head and started letting out shrill screeches. As it did so, it looked like it was crying.

"Oh heavens, this bloody bastard locked me up for a full twelve years, seven months, and twenty-one days! It's been twelve years, seven months, and twenty-one days since I last saw crystals! I may have sinned, gods in heaven, but don't punish me this way! Next time, lock me up in a crystal... I swear! I swear I will cut all ties with Su Ming! I swear it!"

Once the bald crane finished screaming, it glared at Su Ming. Its expression as it gnashed its teeth exuded a deep hatred born after it had suffered greatly.

"Su Ming, this great, handsome, loaded Grandpa Crane will now part ways with you! We are now enemies! Heh heh, let me tell you, no one can lock me up for twelve years, seven months, and twenty-one days, no..." The bald crane was shouting furiously, but with just one flatly spoken sentence from Su Ming, its voice fell silent, as if its throat was seized.

"An entire race's crystals."

"What? What did you say?" The bald crane shuddered violently, and its eyes immediately went wide. Brilliant light shone in them as they focused on Su Ming.

The Abyss Dragon sighed by the side. As it shook its head, it felt that the bald crane would never be able to escape from Su Ming's palm its whole life. As it thought about it, it thought that it was slightly smarter. At the very least, it did not really like crystals that much.

When it thought about this, the Abyss Dragon instinctively looked at its own belly. Within it were the sparkling treasures it had hidden away during the past few years.

"Didn't you say that you want to cut all ties with me? Go, then," Su Ming said flatly.

"Who said it? Damn it, which bastard said it? I am the best of friends with the great, handsome, and powerful Su Ming. Who wants to drive a wedge between us? Is it you?" The bald crane glared at the stunned and innocent Abyss Dragon standing next to it.

"Didn't you say you want to part ways with me? You can leave now." Su Ming cast the bald crane a sideways glance without any expression on his face.

"Damn it all! Just who was it?! If I knew just who this diabolical person was, I would definitely bite him to death! I would bite his bum! This is too abominable, too shameless! How can such a kind crane like me say such callous words?! Su Ming, we respect each other so much, we love each other so much... No, I mean, we..."

"No, there is definitely something wrong in this." Anxiety filled the bald crane's face. As it gnashed its teeth, it whipped its head around and glared at the Duke of Crimson Flame, looking as if it wanted to pounce on him.

"You are the one, you old coot. You're jealous of the beautiful relationship your master and I share, you..."

Su Ming frowned. The bald crane was getting increasingly out of hand with the words it said. He let out a cold harrumph.

The bald crane blinked and immediately grabbed its bald body, looking extremely regretful, but knowing it was too late for it to repent. It stared at Su Ming pitifully.

"O handsome master, o great master, o evil master, this bald crane has committed a wrongdoing. Every single thing that went wrong is my fault, but crystals are innocent. Speaking of, you were talking about an entire race's crystals just now?" Excitement appeared on the bald crane's face.

"Yes, and they are not any ordinary race. They are one of the four venerated races in Divine Essence Star Ocean, and those are the crystals they had accumulated among over the course of countless years," Su Ming replied calmly.

When he said this, the bald crane became so excited that it almost fainted. It hastily went forth and hugged Su Ming's leg while wailing.

"Master! This is a great deal! Don't abandon me and go on your own! I, bald crane, can help you count your crystals! I swear I will not put even a half of one into my pocket! I can even search for those crystals for you! My nose is extremely sensitive, and I'm fast too! Think about it, with how quick I am, I can immediately run once I steal those crystals, and no one will be able to catch up.

"AND I also know how to transform. I can transform into crystals, and no one will be able to tell."

"You really want to join?" Su Ming lowered his head and looked at the bald crane.

The bald crane bobbed its head up and down while staring at Su Ming with excitement.

"You'll have to pay a certain price..." When Su Ming said these words, the bald crane was immediately stunned, and its claws around Su Ming's leg loosened slightly.

"But I can give you a third of those crystals." Once Su Ming said this, the bald crane immediately hugged his legs tightly and refused to let go.

"Two thirds!" it said through gritted teeth, already prepared for Su Ming's haggling next.

"Deal, but you'll have to listen to me completely."

Su Ming nodded without any hesitation. The bald crane was momentarily stunned before its heart filled with slight surprise and bewilderment, but before it could say anything else, Su Ming raised his right hand and patted his storage bag. A buzzing echoed in the air, and the poison wasp with the God Ascension Nectar flew out, then stung the bald crane.

A slight bit of God Ascension Nectar instantly surged into the bald crane's body. Su Ming swiftly raised his hands and tapped a few parts in the bald crane's body. Immediately, a thick wave of God Ascension Nectar's fragrance spread out from the bald crane's body.

This fragrance instantly filled the entire area, and at that moment, endless piercing roars rang out in the originally calm galaxy.

At that moment, the thick fragrance of God Ascension Nectar coming from the bald crane had already turned it... into a thing that would cause all ferocious beasts in Divine Essence Star Ocean to go mad for it!

The Abyss Dragon was originally observing this by the side with the heart of an onlooker for something entertainment, but once it witnessed this, a shudder ran through its body, and it quickly moved backwards.

The Duke of Crimson Flame's pupils shrank as well, and without any hesitation, he grabbed the Abyss Dragon and retreated.

The bald crane was momentarily stunned before it lowered its head and sniffed its body, then immediately let out a shrill cry as if it had gone mad.

"God Ascension Nectar! Damn it, this is... this is Divine Essence Star Ocean, there are countless ferocious beasts in here! I-I!" As it cried, it even forgot its usual act of referring to itself as 'Grandpa Crane'.

"Lure one hundred thousand ferocious beasts, and I will give you seven-tenths of one-tenth of the crystals. Lure three hundred thousand ferocious beasts, and I will give you eight-tenths. Lure five hundred thousand, and I will give you nine-tenths. Lure one million... and I will give you all the crystals!" Su Ming stated flatly.

The bald crane shuddered, then gritted its teeth. It would do it!

Chapter 956: Attracting Monsters...

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The bald crane shouted out in a tone as if it was about to risk everything. It screamed in a language Su Ming could not understand. This was the bald crane after it was excited by Su Ming once he said it could obtain all the crystals if it lured one million ferocious beasts.

The bald crane shuddered, but brilliant light shone in its eyes. This light could fuse into the universe, could overturn it, could make a weak being instantly turn peerless in terms of power, and could even make the bald crane go mad.

"Damn it all, I will do it! When a bird dies, its feathers will point towards the sky, but I don't have feathers! I'm destined to not die! I'll do it! I'll definitely do it!"

The bald crane's eyes were bloodshot as it shouted continuously. Those who understood it knew that this was just it boosting its own morale because it had gone into a frenzy due to the stimulation of the crystals, despite the fact that it was incredibly terrified.

However, if those who did not understand it saw the bald crane acting this way at this moment, they would definitely think that this bird... was a mad bird.

As it roared, it even circled around Su Ming, instinctively flopping about. Its screeches grew stronger, causing the Abyss Dragon to widen its eyes by the side, and it looked down on the bald crane for flinging all caution to the wind for crystals.

'Hmph. I am a noble Abyss Dragon. I won't lose my composure in such a manner for such a small benefit. The bald crane looked very smart during our journey, but in truth, it's just an idiot, huh?'

As the Abyss Dragon regarded the bald crane with scorn, Su Ming's voice suddenly reached its ears. That voice immediately stunned the Abyss Dragon, and then, it started shuddering like the bald crane.

"Abyss Dragon, do you want the Dragon Tendon you lost in the past?"

The Abyss Dragon stared at Su Ming blankly, speechless.

"You don't want it? Then forget it."

"I want it! But taking away my Dragon Tendon was the Emperor of Abyss' will in the past. He is a Kalpa Lord who is a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!"

"The Heaven Traversers are one of the four venerated races. They lived in Divine Essence Star Ocean for many years, so you think there aren't any Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death among them?" Su Ming asked faintly.

The Abyss Dragon shuddered violently.

"I can promise you. When I leave Divine Essence Star Ocean and gain my footing in True Morning Dao World, I will go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World. I will let you reunite with Yu Xuan and seize back the Dragon Tendon taken from you in the past," Su Ming promised calmly.

"... I'll do it! I'll do it!" As the Abyss Dragon shuddered, its eyes turned red. Even in dreams, it thought to seize back its Dragon Tendon so that it would no longer be in this state.

"I don't need you luring those ferocious beasts. You can just run with the bald crane, and the rules will be the same for you. If you lure one hundred thousand ferocious beasts, I will give you seven-tenths. If you lure three hundred thousand, I will give you eight-tenths. If you lure five hundred thousand, I will give you nine-tenths, and if you lure one million... I will give you all of it. And I'm talking about your Dragon Tendon."

Once Su Ming finished speaking, the screeching bald crane stopped moving, and it looked at him with an expression filled with deep emotion, thinking that he was a great person. He was worried about its safety, which was why he sent the Abyss Dragon to be its companion.

"Alright, bald crane. Whether or not you can get those crystals will now depend on you!"

Encouragement appeared in Su Ming's eyes. This was the first time the bald crane saw this, and its heart was instantly filled with excitement. It began to think even more that Su Ming was truly great to it. Blood rushed to its head, clouding its judgment, and the excitement from the crystals caused it to roar. With a single move, it rushed forward.

The Abyss Dragon's eyes had also turned bloodshot. It flew forward swiftly, its goal one million ferocious beasts. After all, what it would receive was not crystals. It did not matter to it how many crystals there were lying about. In the end, they were just crystals, but if a portion of its Dragon Tendon went missing and it only received seven-tenths of it, it would no longer be a Dragon Tendon...

For a period of time, only Su Ming and the Duke of Crimson Flame were in the galaxy. The Duke of Crimson Flame looked at the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon leaving into the distance with a pitying gaze, then shook his head.

Su Ming sat down cross-legged and averted his gaze from the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon to look in the direction of Heaven Traversers. After a long while, he closed his eyes and immersed himself in meditating and training.

Su Ming might not know the full extent of the bald crane's abilities, but he could still somewhat guess that crane's origins. He knew that no matter how many ordeals it went through, it would not die, unless it ran into ferocious spirits that were on the same level as Ecang.

Besides, Su Ming had controlled the poison wasp when it injected the God Ascension Nectar into its body, and the amount in its body was just a tiny little bit. It would not be able to attract ferocious beasts that were on Ecang's level.

Most importantly, Su Ming had left a hint of his Atman in the bald crane's body, so he could learn of all the crane's actions clearly. This was something Su Ming had done intentionally after leaving Black Ink Planet because the bald crane had made itself infamous with the Dual Fiend's name there.

At that moment, when Su Ming closed his eyes, he trained with half his attention on the Atman inside the bald crane's body, just as if he was multitasking. If the bald crane ran into a danger it could not solve, then he would immediately have the Duke of Crimson Flame shift with him.

.....

The bald crane roared, and with a presence that screamed it would not turn back until it reached its goal, it charged forward like a shooting star. As loud whistles were stirred up due to its movements, it rushed forward. The Abyss Dragon followed behind it, and it was just as crazy as the bald crane.

The two old partners could be said to be giving their all, one for crystals, and the other for its Dragon Tendon. With a solemn, tragic air about them as well as excitement, a thick wave of God Ascension Nectar spread out, and like a bright lamp in the galaxy that was as dark as night, they attracted the attention of all the ferocious beasts in the area.

After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, a muffled roar came from the space before them. Three incredibly huge Void Beasts manifested in the galaxy. They possessed bodies that resembled crocodiles, and once they appeared, they fixed their stares on the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon who passed by them in a flash. With loud roars, these three Void Beasts rushed out to chase after the bald crane.

The fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar had stimulated them so much that they had entered a frenzy.

"Come! Come to me, I've been waiting for you!"

The terror in the bald crane's heart had already reached its peak, but the excitement brought by the crystals had also reached its peak, which was why it continued screeching as it charged forward in its craze, as if it could only provide an outlet for its fears by doing so.

While roaring, the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon turned into two long arcs that charged about in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Gradually, a den of flying snakes that had the bodies of pythons but possessed human faces and wings on their backs closed in while hissing. There were tens of thousands of these ferocious beasts, and their tails were shivering. Their eyes had already turned crimson due to the stimulation by the God Ascension Nectar. With monstrous aggressiveness, they charged towards the bald crane as if they had gone mad.

Some time later, loud booms reverberated in a spot even farther away. Those sounds came from a swarm of speckled poisonous wasps packed densely together, each of which was as huge as an average man. They came towards the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon with a loud buzzing.

The bald crane roared and turned around to change its direction. It charged ahead once more, traveling at the fastest speed it could muster. There were nearly one hundred thousand ferocious beasts behind it at that moment, and they were all chasing after it as if they had gone mad. The moment the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon slowed down even a single bit, those creatures would immediately catch up to them.

"How many?!" The bald crane shouted. Fear had occupied most of its heart at that moment, and the thought of giving up rose in its subconsciousness.

"One hundred thousand!" the Abyss Dragon quickly said behind the bald crane. It was also incredibly terrified, especially of the murderous presence the horde of ferocious beasts exuded. That presence caused it to shudder.

"Damn it all, just this little?"

The bald crane was conflicted. There was not even three hundred thousand of these ferocious beasts yet, and Su Ming might not give it those crystals. Then a thought struck its head: Since it had already become bait, it should definitely not work for nothing.

It gritted its teeth and went charging in another direction. As it flew, it continued roaring fiercely. The God Ascension Nectar's fragrance spread even farther as it continued moving about in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

About an hour later, roars echoed in space, and hundreds of giants walked out. Each of them was nearly one hundred thousand feet tall, and all of them held giant wooden clubs in their hands. They had no eyes on their faces, only huge mouths. Their hair was made of countless thin threads that looked like snakes, and as they spilled over their shoulders, they exuded an incredibly great primitive presence.

Behind them were nearly a hundred thousand ferocious beasts of all sorts of appearances. At that moment, with a madness they had never experienced in their lives, they charged forward like an ocean of beasts coming forth in the form of a tidal wave.

All the roars caused Divine Essence Star Ocean to tremble, and it stirred up a storm that had not been raised for a very long time.

The bald crane shuddered. As it continued flying forward, it shouted out, "How many?!"

"Almost three hundred thousand... Huh?"

The Abyss Dragon had just said half of its sentence when it suddenly stopped. It looked ahead with a terrified gaze. At that moment, the bald crane also saw the galaxy roaring before them. Countless ripples spread out, and they had appeared due to more than tens of thousands of whirlwinds coming into existence.

Each of them was several tens of thousands of feet tall, and they were sweeping forward at a rapid speed. If anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see that there were purplish red things the size of a palm inside. All of them were spinning rapidly, which was how they turned into whirlwinds.

In fact, the galaxy behind them looked as if it had shattered, which was due to black ferocious beasts that looked like elephants that numbered more than a hundred thousand. With a brutal and crazed intent, they charged towards the area.

"Three hundred thousand... four hundred thousand! There are definitely more than four hundred thousand ferocious beasts!" the Abyss Dragon immediately roared. It could not see the end nor the edge of the swarm. There were ferocious beasts in front and after them. There was no end to them, and it was unknown just how wide of an area they occupied.

"Ah! Damn it, why is it only four hundred thousand?!"

The bald crane had almost gone mad. As it roared, it became conflicted again. If it was three hundred thousand ferocious beasts, it would have immediately chosen to bring them to Su Ming and complete its mission without any hesitation, but there were around four hundred thousand of them, and with just a little more, there would be five hundred thousand ferocious beasts, which would mean nine-tenths of the crystals...

The bald crane seized its bald scalp with all its strength. As it gritted its teeth, it let out a loud roar and did not choose to leave. Instead, it chose to change its direction to head deeper into Divine Essence Star Ocean. It sped up madly and charged forward.

The Abyss Dragon too gritted its teeth, then changed its body into that of a huge dog to flee swiftly with the bald crane.

Chapter 957 Idolization

In the deeper parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean were three planets. For some unknown reason, they had become connected together in the passage of time.

Xuan Shang and the other three cultivators were cautiously heading forward. Their expressions were of extreme vigilance, and they were occasionally observing their surroundings.

"There's something off about this place. There's a ruthless presence in this galaxy..." the person called Yun You said in a low voice.

"Perhaps it's due to the battle those two terrifying people instigated..."

"Quiet. Based on the marks on the map, Violent Flame Beasts are within these connected planets. The creatures are usually deep in sleep, so as long as we don't bother them, we will be safe."

The four of them fell silent. While their hearts beat nervously, they slowly approached the connected planets. Their actions made it clear that they were aiming for some sort of item in the planets, or else they could have just circumnavigated this place.

"Is the map accurate? Is the Flame Fiend really there?"

"It should be correct. We also saw it when we were on our way here. Now, as long as we can obtain Flame Fiend's blood, we will be able to open the Violent Sun Path leading to the Dust Burners."

The four of them spoke to each other softly while slowly approaching the connected planets. Suddenly, a piercing screech came from the connected planets. The ruthlessness and heat within that voice caused the expressions of the four people to change drastically, and without any hesitation, they retreated, rapidly casting their divine abilities. With nervousness, they prepared for a huge battle.

However, the scene they saw next made the four instantly lose all their will to fight. Terror appeared on their faces, and they brought forth a speed that was equivalent to

the one they mustered when they were avoiding Su Ming. They coughed up blood and instantly executed Fleeing Blood, intending to hastily leave the area.

Because they saw...

Shadows of flames rushing out with loud howls from the connected planets. Within them were ferocious beasts in the shape of wolves. They formed large packs and numbered to about one hundred thousand. They rushed out together, and this sight was enough to shock all those who saw it.

Behind them were tens of thousands of human-shaped living beings. Their bodies were enveloped in flames, but there was indeed a person within those flames. However, these people's eyes were gray, and there no sign of life within them. Yet there was no aura of death in them either.

Some of them possessed wings, and some were cultivators. Some of them were members of the tribes in Divine Essence Star Ocean and were part of the alien races. All of them had been killed by the ferocious beasts in these connected planets over the course of countless years, and their bodies had been Possessed by Flame Fiends.

This scene was enough for the skins of the four cultivators to crawl. The shadow of death loomed over their heads and hearts, and even after they executed Fleeing Blood, broken smiles still appeared on their faces. In fact, before they even had the time to regret anything, they already made preparations to self-destruct.

They would rather die than become those puppets and be Possessed by Flame Fiends.

However, the hundred thousand something flame wolves, tens of thousands of puppets Possessed by Flame Fiends, and the flames they brought about in their wake did not even spare a glance at the four people at their doorstep. Instead, as they roared, they charged forward as if they had gone mad.

The four cultivators stood by the side of these ferocious beasts and watched wide-eyed as they were ignored and the creatures left into the distance. The cultivators were completely stunned.

The four of them looked at each other, speechless.

They remained silent for a moment before Xuan Shang mumbled, "What happened?"

"Could it be that a supreme treasure has appeared?!" Yun You immediately exclaimed, and his eyes shone with a bright light.

"That should be the case, or else the swarm of Flame Fiends wouldn't have ignored us."

"Yes, judging by their looks, they were very anxious... All of them must have left their nest!" The four of them exchanged glances, seeing the excitement in each other's eyes.

With shining eyes, they immediately turned into four long arcs that charged towards the connected planets. After a moment, they flew out, and when they did so, excitement could be seen on their faces. Clearly, they had not expected that things would go so smoothly for them.

They had successfully obtained the blood they needed in the connected planets. It might not be very fresh, but it was sufficient.

At that moment, there were two choices before them. They could leave and head to Dust Burners... or search for the swarm of Flame Fiends and see just what sort of supreme treasure it was that attracted these creatures, but there was a danger in the latter choice.

However, cultivators constantly ran into all sorts of dangers in the universe as they continued growing. This was something natural to them. After discussing among themselves in low murmurs, they made their choice.

They turned into long arcs and charged at full speed towards the direction where the Flame Fiends had headed. They wanted to see just what sort of supreme treasure it was. It would be best if they had the chance to obtain it, but even if they did not, it would still be better than avoiding it.

They had already obtained the Flame Fiend's blood and they now had freedom in their actions. If they ran into danger, they would not need to be bothered about anything and could just run at full speed. In fact, they had already discussed among themselves where they would meet if they parted ways.

As the four people charged ahead to search for the Flame Fiends' tracks, they dashed forth at full speed. About two hours later, their footsteps came to an abrupt halt. They had already been stunned once on that day, but now, they felt their jaws falling slack due to shock for the second time.

They heard indescribable roars, and they came from a swarm of ferocious beasts numbering to seven hundred thousand. They were all letting out astonishing roars, and the four cultivators saw a huge ocean in the distant galaxy.

That ocean was formed by ferocious beasts of various types occupying the entire galaxy. Among them were the Flame Fiends, but most of the ferocious beasts there were creatures that the four cultivators did not recognize. Yet the presence and mighty pressure coming from them as well as the feeling they gained from the Flame Fiends were enough to make their hearts beat with fear.

The edge of this sea of ferocious beasts could not be seen. The only thing they could see was... a bald crane that was being chased down in a frenzy at the front of this swarm of beasts. There was also a huge dog behind it, and they were both fleeing at a breakneck speed.

The four cultivators could not help but stare in shock. They watched the incredibly dazzling bald crane in dumbfoundedness as it shook its bum to lure the swarm of beasts in an incredibly coquettish manner.

"Is it in heat?" one of the four cultivators instinctively asked.

Soon, the bald crane's loud cries reached their ears from the distance.

"Damn you all! Come, chase after your Grandpa Crane! I'll trounce all of you! I'm invincible! I'm the greatest crane in the universe!"

Due to extreme terror, the bald crane suffered a mental breakdown. It could only continue shouting so that it would not fall limp due to its fear.

"I've walked through the universe and ran into all sorts of things! What are you?! You're not birds! I am the true bird here... Come! Come on! Make this beast swarm greater! I'll pummel all of you!" the bald crane roared and shook its butt fiercely while flying even faster. The dog that was the Abyss Dragon had already reached its limit while running and was incredibly exhausted at that moment, but it did not dare to relax. The beast swarm behind it made it think that if it relaxed, it would immediately be torn to shreds.

'Well damn me, why have I never discovered that I'm actually so fast?'

Not for the first time, this question rose in Abyss Dragon's mind as it charged forward. It did not know that their speed had been increased as Su Ming's Atman continued circulating in the bald crane's body. This was also one of the reasons why Su Ming dared to have them lure the beast swarm.

Their fatigue was mostly distributed between Su Ming and the Duke of Crimson Flame, or else the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon would have been caught a long time ago.

As the bald crane fled from the roaring beast swarm behind it, it asked loudly, "How many of them now?! Tell your Grandpa Crane!"

"Seven hundred thousand to eight hundred thousand! Maybe a few more or less!" the Abyss Dragon immediately roared.

"Damn it, damn it..." The bald crane was immediately in conflict once more. It did not dare to look back. It was afraid that at the moment it looked, it would faint in terror.

While feeling conflicted, the bald crane swiftly asked, "Say, just how many crystals do you think a venerated race would have?"

"No matter what, there would be around thirty to fifty million..." The Abyss Dragon turned its head back to sneak a glance at the beast swarm behind it, and already regretted promising Su Ming to do this. In its eyes, this was the same as it risking its own life. At just the slightest mistake, it would die here.

"DAMN IT ALL!!!"

When the bald crane heard these words, it was immediately stimulated. The conflict it felt in its heart instantly disappeared, and the light from crystals completely replaced the original shine in its eyes.

"I can get nine-tenths with the beasts I've lured now, so by one-tenth less, I will lose from three million to five million crystals. I won't allow it! I absolutely won't allow myself to lose three million to five million crystals! I'll give it my all! Abyss Dragon, do you want your Dragon Tendon to be missing a portion?! Darn it all, what's a Dragon Tendon when it misses a portion?! That's a belt!"

When the Abyss Dragon heard this, it was instantly furious. "Your tendon's the one that's a belt!"

"I want those three million to five million crystals!" the bald crane roared furiously.

"I don't want a belt!" the Abyss Dragon roared as well. The two old partners looked at each other and charged forward in a mad dash before changing their direction to lure in more hordes of beasts.

The sea of beasts behind them had grown to a monstrous degree. The galaxy trembled as it was swept by what seemed like a windstorm.

When they left into the distance, the four cultivators still continued to stare ahead blankly. They could hear the bald crane's words, but they were incredibly vague, and they were unable to know the details. At that moment, when they looked at where the bald crane had disappeared into the distance, their gazes were filled with terror and shock.

"That crane must be an incredibly powerful existence in Divine Essence Star Ocean!"

"Yes, it must have definitely done something that all of these creatures cannot forgive, that is why it's being chased by such a large swarm..."

"That dog is pretty pitiful. It must have gotten itself accidentally dragged into the mix..."

"But judging by their looks, they don't seem to be too willing. Still, no matter what, they must be very famous beasts in Divine Essence Star Ocean."

"When I have enough power, I will definitely tame a creature like this!"

The four of them exchanged glances with each other, and enchanted expressions appeared on their faces. They appeared to idolize the bald crane incredibly greatly in the depths of their hearts. Clearly, to them, being chased down by a million ferocious beasts in Divine Essence Star Ocean was an incredibly great feat.

That was right, there were already more than a million beasts behind the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, but since the bald crane did not dare to turn its head back to look, it did not know that the Abyss Dragon... had an inborn, crippling flaw when it came to counting...

This flaw was one that not even Su Ming had noticed. At that moment, sweat broke out on his face, and the Duke of Crimson Flame's face had also turned pale. Only after using their full power were they able to have the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon maintain their speed. However, the duo... had clearly lured a million beasts already, yet they were still luring more...

"Damn it, just what does it want to do?!" Su Ming shouted angrily.

Chapter 958 The Frivolous Crane

"Eight hundred thousand something, eh...? No, looks like seven hundred thousand something..."

"Damn it all, we reached seven hundred thousand something just now! Do you know how to count?!"

As the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon shouted at each other, endless dust storms rose in the galaxy in front of them. They were due to meteors that were charging forth, but while these meteors might seem like stones at first glance, all those who looked closely would find that they actually had human faces.

These were clearly stone people. When they curled themselves into a ball, they would turn into meteors. At that moment, they were traveling forth and closing in on the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon. There was no end to them, and they numbered more than a hundred thousand.

The bald crane's eyes went wide. As it let out a shrill shriek, it heard the Abyss Dragon's voice behind it.

"Eight hundred thousand something. This time, I'm certain there are eight hundred thousand something of them. There's no mistaking it."

The bald crane turned around swiftly, and for the first time, looked behind, but when it did so, it nearly fainted. Even though no one would be able to tell with one glance just how many creatures there were, the densely packed and endless swarm of beasts behind the bald crane would allow all those with some experience and knowledge of how to count to be absolutely certain that there... were more than one million creatures.

"Well, damn me..."

The bald crane no longer knew how to express its indignation and grievance. With a loud roar, it charged into the distance. It had already decided that it would no longer lure the ferocious beasts in the area. Since there were already a million of them, then it would leave in the direction Su Ming had told it to go. The bald crane was so fast that it looked like a shooting star rushing through the galaxy.

"There's only eight hundred thousand of them! There's still a little more before we reach one million! Baldy, while you can be content with a few less crystals, I don't want a belt!" When the Abyss Dragon saw that the bald crane was fleeing, it immediately knew what it decided to do and became nervous and extremely anxious.

The bald crane was burning with anger and ignored the Abyss Dragon's words. It honestly did not want to pay any attention to this stupid mutt who did not know how to count and nearly brought about its death.

"Bald crane!" the Abyss Dragon roared.

"You idiot, you stupid mutt, y-y-you... Turn your head around and count properly. I could tell with just one glance that there is at least a million in that swarm of beasts, and you tell me there's only eight hundred thousand?! Do you want to bring about my death?!" The bald crane roared, and without turning its head back, it continued charging forward.

The Abyss Dragon was momentarily stunned before it immediately became perturbed. It remembered that Yu Xuan had once told it that it had some weaknesses when it came to counting...

While feeling awkward, the Abyss Dragon immediately stopped speaking and lowered its head to follow behind the bald crane, charging into the distance with gritted teeth.

At that moment, if anyone cast their gaze across the galaxy, they would see an incredibly magnificent sight. There was a beast swarm that occupied a boundless expanse of galaxy, and it was a swarm rarely seen in Divine Essence Star Ocean. It seemed like there was an ocean roaring, tumbling, and chasing after the bald crane and Abyss Dragon.

There were all kinds of ferocious beasts in the swarm, and even the weakest possessed power in Heaven Cultivation Realm. In fact, some of the powerful beasts even had power equivalent to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, but this was not important. The number of beasts in the swarm would make even the pupils of a normal Master of Fate, Lives, and Death shrink.

When the numbers of a certain group reach a certain extent, the strength of the individuals in the group would no longer play a big role. The presence and impact brought by the entire group would crush all barriers.

In the mid of this, all living creatures and races would have to face the threat of having all of their kind massacred, especially... when the amount of creatures in this swarm was not just one million. There was actually more than one million and five hundred thousand of them.

Even though there were countless ferocious beasts in Divine Essence Star Ocean and these one million five hundred thousand something beasts were just a small speck of the total that lived in this small area, to Heaven Traversers, who only numbered to one hundred thousand something, this would be a disaster that their tribe had never faced before.

Even after they had lived in the inner parts for countless years, they had never met a swarm like this. In the past, there would only be from a hundred thousand something up to hundreds of thousands of beasts that would attack. This was the limit. There would also only be one kind of creature that attacked them. Hence, the presence brought by a sea of beasts like this, formed by multiple species and many ferocious beasts that usually moved alone, could crush all forms of willpower.

With its obsession with crystals, the bald crane rushed towards Heaven Traversers in long charges, without caring about its own fatigue, with a will that screamed that it would not turn back without getting its crystals, and with a fearless expression akin to the tragic heroes in songs.

The misery it felt was something that only it knew, but compared to crystals, all of this turned into excitement within the bald crane's heart.

"Fifty million crystals! Fifty million crystals... all mine! Damn it all, it's just luring the monsters, right? It's just about attracting these beasts' attention, right?! I've been doing this since ages ago... Huh? Why would I say I'm already used to it?" As the bald crane continued fleeing, it growled, and as it did so... it discovered a familiar feeling!

This was a feeling that made it think that it had often fled with such a large swarm of ferocious beasts in the past. This thought seemed to be buried in the depths of its memories, not able to appear during all other types of life-threatening dangers. Only in certain uniquely familiar situations would it rise up to the forefront of the bald crane's mind.

'Could it be that I often did things that made others bristle in anger, and was always hunted down?' The bald crane blinked in surprise. With its understanding of itself, it seemed like this... was actually highly possible.

As the bald crane mulled over it, it turned its head around and roared based on that familiar feeling it had in its heart. "Come, you bunch of bastards! Come chase after your Grandpa Crane! Did you see it, you bastards?! I can still run!" The bald crane was facing the endless sea of beasts and moving backwards. It even noticed to its shock that it was actually moving faster in this manner...

'Could it be that I truly did this often in the past...?'

The bald crane was feeling slightly excited. It no longer just flew, but as it flapped its wings, it started swaying left and right, flying in a curve. Because of it, it discovered that not only did it become faster, it gradually discovered a feeling in the depths of its heart.

As it cackled loudly, the bald crane even twisted its body. While speaking, it even started clicking its tongue continuously at the swarm of beasts chasing after them with bloodshot eyes, in a manner as if it was spitting in their faces.

"Heh, you bunch of dudes on fire, I just looted your nest and kidnapped the beautiful lass among you, you know?! Come on! Chase after me! I'll trounce all of you!

"You too, you golems! What now? You're even glaring at me! Oh wow~ One of these days, I'll disassemble all of you and use your body parts to build my house! Hmm...? I seem to have done something like this in the past," the bald crane instinctively said. As it did, the familiar feeling became even stronger, and its body became even faster. In fact, its actions became even more practiced. It continued 'striking poses', and a mocking look even appeared on its face without its knowledge.

In fact, it even came to an abrupt halt, and when the swarm of beasts were about to submerge it, it let out a strange cry, shook its butt, cursed, moved its body, and widened the distance between them once again. It occasionally moved by swaying left, then right, and sometimes even used its claws to make provocative gestures. Those movements, those expressions, and those actions had long ago stunned the Abyss Dragon when it saw them.

There were plenty of descriptions that could be used to describe the bald crane at that moment, but if it was to pick the most accurate and direct one, then there were only two choices.

Frivolous...

Despicable crane...

The response to the bald crane's actions were roars that were almost connected to each other. Those roars came from the entire swarm of beasts. Their voices were like waves that shook the entire galaxy.

"Louder!" The bald crane became excited. That familiar feeling had become stronger, and it had even almost forgotten about the crystals. As the swarm of beasts roared behind it, the bald crane began to shout loudly.

The Abyss Dragon watched the bald crane with admiration shining in its eyes. It had never thought that the sleazy crane would have such courage and that it would be able to show such a sight on this day.

Filled with a despicable, frivolous air, the bald crane triggered the madness within the sea of beasts. This was no longer them simply attracted by the God Ascension Nectar. In fact, it could even be said that if the bald crane had acted this way since the start, then even without the God Ascension Nectar, it would still have been able to complete the task Su Ming had given to it... and it might have even been able to lure even more ferocious beasts.

Su Ming opened his eyes in the galaxy and found himself admiring the bald crane's courage. In truth, if he was in that position, he did not believe that he would do any better than the bald crane.

'There are specialists in every single profession in the world. This crane... is an oddball, all right... Could it be that before it lost its memories, it often did things like these?' Su Ming was absorbed in his thoughts.

The bald crane was flying in a frivolous manner in the galaxy. The smug expression and excited look on its face made it seem like it enjoyed luring a million beasts very much. It continued shaking its butt and making provocative gestures with its claws, even occasionally shouting loudly. Coupled with its contemptuous expression, the bald crane became the most dazzling existence in the galaxy. The sea of beasts behind it were driven completely mad and chased after it even more quickly, as if they were no longer chasing the bald crane for the God Ascension Nectar, but were instead charging forward to tear apart that detestable creature alive.

The Abyss Dragon's admiration grew stronger. Several days later, this admiration rose to fanaticism when the bald crane stepped into Heaven Traversers' territory and turned around to let out a loud roar.

"Hey, you bastards, we're here! Trample this place, wreak havoc in this place. No matter what race they belong to, keep the pretty lasses for me! Find all the crystals and treasures here, and then send them all back to Whooping Crane Mountain!"

"Damn it all, we're occupying this place!"

The bald crane turned its head around and roared at the sea of beasts. The excitement on its face reached its peak, and once it finished shouting these words, it became perplexed. It seemed like... these words only caused that familiar feeling to become stronger.

ROAR!

The roars from the one million beasts shook the entire galaxy and reverberated through the entire cosmos, rousing countless Heaven Traversers from their sleep. The Abyss Dragon also started roaring loudly while looking at the bald crane with a fanatic expression.

At that moment, those who did not know the details of what was going on would definitely believe that the bald crane was the leader of the sea of beasts... Its presence, its frivolous attitude, and its expression all exuded the temperament of the leader of beasts.

Chapter 959 What Is Your Dao

This was a calamity! It was a disaster!

Even if Heaven Traversers were one of the four venerated races, they had never seen a sea of beasts of this size. When all one million beasts rushed into the galaxy that belonged to Heaven Traversers, they were not the only ones who were shocked, even the Sand Spirit sitting on the gigantic ball of sand was left stunned.

The old man stared at the clamoring bald crane with a blank gaze, then looked at the one million beasts behind it, and a wry smile appeared on its face.

He finally understood why Su Ming wanted him to detain Heaven Traversers' Progenitor for one month.

"This crane... I seem to have some impression of it..."

The old man stared at the bald crane and sank into deep thought, but he had lived for far too long, and the number of memories that had accumulated in his mind, so he was unable to locate the right memory and have it surface in his mind instantly. He needed time to recall. Only then would he be able to find the thoughts that were buried in the passage of time.

"Heaven Traverser bastards, come out now and welcome your guests!" the bald crane roared smugly and charged towards Heaven Traversers. The beast swarm behind it roared and surged forward, and in the blink of an eye, they filled an extremely large area.

In fact, the bald crane did not even need to specifically guide them. The swarm of beasts simply destroyed everything that blocked its paths.

The only thing the bald crane needed to do was to continue rushing forward until it reached the end of Heaven Traversers' territory. Then... it would complete its task.

There were around one hundred cultivation planets in Heaven Traversers' territory. At that instant, countless powerful presences erupted forth from them, and tens of thousands of people rushed out. Yet once they saw the sea of beasts in the galaxy, their expressions instantly changed drastically.

The bald crane looked incredibly smug. As it shrieked excitedly, it continued rushing forward. Some time later, a piercing light suddenly appeared around it and the Abyss Dragon. With a flash, the two disappeared.

Su Ming and the Duke of Crimson Flame stood in the galaxy beyond Heaven Traversers' territory. As they watched what was happening in the distance, white light shone beside them. The bald crane and the Abyss Dragon appeared, and almost at the instant they did so, the Duke of Crimson Flame raised his right hand, and a sea of fire instantly enveloped the duo.

Su Ming also swung his right hand. A sealing power appeared swiftly, and with all his and the Duke of Crimson Flame's power, they covered up the God Ascension Nectar on the bald crane.

"Crystals! My crystals!" When the bald crane was Relocated, it was momentarily stunned, then immediately looked at Su Ming.

"When the impact brought by the sea of beasts is over, you can go over and loot all the crystals you want," Su Ming said while looking at Heaven Traversers in the distance. A cold glint shone in his eyes.

"No, I want to go now. What if they take everything away?" the bald crane asked with a slightly worried tone.

"The God Ascension Nectar is still on you. If you go, you'll be walking straight into your death." Su Ming looked towards the bald crane.

"God Ascension Nectar?" The bald crane licked its beak and sucked in a sharp breath. This action immediately caused Su Ming to look at it. In fact, his expression even changed at that instant.

He could clearly sense that the presence of the God Ascension Nectar on its body disappeared the instant it sucked in a breath. In fact, the nectar became completely non-existent, as if it had been completely absorbed.

"This bit of God Ascension Nectar is nothing to me. Look, there's none of that now in me, right?" When the bald crane saw Su Ming's expression, it immediately became smug. It shook its body slightly, and with a swing, it turned into a big yellow dog and even bared its teeth at Su Ming.

The Abyss Dragon was already looking at the bald crane with an incredibly fanatic expression. In its eyes, there was practically nothing the bald crane could not do.

"Hmm? Little Su, why aren't you releasing the seal yet? Let me out. I'm telling you, Little Su, every single breath of my time you waste, several hundreds of my crystals are snatched by other people. Those are my crystals! Mine!" the bald crane shouted out loudly. It knew that it had committed a great meritorious deed and also knew that Su Ming would not berate it no matter what, which was why it was so proud of itself that it began shivering.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he opened the seal with a wry smile. The Duke of Crimson Flame also extinguished the flames, completely speechless. Brilliant light immediately shone in the bald crane's eyes, and it charged towards Heaven Traversers' territory.

The Abyss Dragon took the form of a big black dog at that moment and quickly chased after the bald crane. The two mutts were so quick that they charged towards Heaven Traversers' territory with a speed that would not lose to the one they used when they were escaping.

Su Ming could already imagine that the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon's arrival would definitely make Heaven Traversers suffer the heaviest blow in terms of crystals under this disaster.

Su Ming shook his head. As he took a step forward, he too moved towards Heaven Traversers' territory, where all the beasts in the swarm had now surged in. He did not move quickly, but when he stepped into the Heaven Traversers' galaxy, loud booming sounds and roars rang in his ears, moving past him like a wave of impact.

Su Ming arrived at the gigantic ball of sand where the old Sand Spirit was. He stood there and looked at the galaxy in the distance before he closed his eyes.

He might have closed his eyes, but he swiftly spread his divine sense outwards. This was Ecang's divine sense, and it could cover an incredibly wide area.

Su Ming saw an endless number of ferocious beasts. As they roared, having lost sight of the bald crane, and their anger exploded due to what happened before, they began to wantonly destroy everything in the area.

Even though they knew that the bald crane had nothing to do with Heaven Traversers, in their anger, they no longer bothered about these things. It did not matter whether it

was the slaughter between the ferocious beasts themselves or the attempted counterattacks launched by Heaven Traversers, all of these things became the tipping point for this disaster.

A bloody stench filled the space and stimulated even more ferocious beasts to go mad. Their charge destroyed the planets one by one, and their slaughter brought damage to Heaven Traversers that they would never be able to recover from.

In fact, even if they were just fighting among themselves, the act of using the place as their battlefield was already enough to bring about great destruction to Heaven Traversers.

This was a disaster, a bloody feast.

In the face of this sort of beast swarm, even powerful warriors in Solar Kalpa Realm would be unable to last. Only a second Master of Fate, Lives, and Death could maybe do something.

Su Ming saw the bald crane moving through the cultivation planets with the Abyss Dragon. They continued changing their appearances repeatedly and took on various looks. Occasionally, they would roar in the beast swarm, and at other times, they would fly out of the cultivation planets in excitement. Sometimes, they would rush into a crowd of Heaven Traversers and snatch their storage bags as the people were too shocked to react.

The duo's actions were incredibly rampant, but they didn't attract too much attention to themselves with the disaster all around them.

Su Ming retrieved his divine sense. There was no longer any need for him to continue watching. Booming sounds were echoing from the ball of sand beneath his feet. They were the incensed roars and outbursts made by Heaven Traversers' Progenitor after his anger reached a boiling point. Clearly, he could sense the changes in the world outside.

"Heaven Traversers have paid the price for what they did in the past." Su Ming opened his eyes. "I know that you can hear me. You are an Almighty Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, and I am indeed not your opponent, but listen well... wanting to kill me isn't something that can be done easily.

"Your tribe has paid the price for what you've done, and I will no longer come to wreak havoc among you again... but if you try to hunt me down, then be prepared to be sealed again and have your race face the disaster of having a sea of beasts slaughter them.

"And if there really comes a time when this second swarm will arrive... then it will no longer be just one million ferocious beasts who will visit you. Instead, I will do everything that I can to lure more monsters and make sure that you are the only Heaven Traverser left. Then, from then on, we will fight until one of us dies!

"This is my threat to you," Su Ming declared flatly. As his voice echoed in the area, it seeped into the sand, falling into the ears of the trapped Heaven Traversers' Progenitor.

Almost at the instant Su Ming's words reached his ears, the roars and booms in the sand disappeared and turned into dead silence.

"You are a cultivator from the world outside. All of you talk about practicing Dao. This Dao is your heaven, and all of you practice the Dao that belong to heaven. You lured these monsters to destroy my race, does it conform to your Dao?!" The muffled voice of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor came from the sand ball with a loud bang.

"Dao..." Su Ming fell silent for a moment before he raised his head and looked at the galaxy.

"I've come into contact with quite a large number of cultivators from the galaxy beyond, and all of the Almighty's possess their own Dao. I want to know. What is your Dao?"

"You did this for a small matter in the past, your Master hadn't even died. He possesses the fifth stone on his person, and it is only natural that others would want to snatch it. Even if I didn't take action, others would still have tried to snatch that stone.

"And because of this matter, you harbor the desire to exterminate my race a thousand years later. Tell me, what is your Dao?!" As the muffled voice in the ball of sand echoed in space, even the old Sand Spirit sitting down cross-legged and meditating opened his eyes and looked at Su Ming.

He, too, wanted to know what Su Ming's Dao was.

Su Ming remained silent.

"You don't have Dao. You are empty!" The loud laughter from Heaven Traversers' Progenitor rang from the ball of sand. His laughter contained an ancient air as well as delight. As that laughter echoed in space, it shook the ball of sand so much that it started trembling.

"You are a person without Dao, and neither do you have a Dao heart. There are three thousand Great Daos in the universe and seventy nine thousand Small Daos, but you belong to none of them. You might seem to belong to the Killing Dao, but in truth, that is not the case. You also seem like you belong to the Life Extermination Dao, but true life extermination is not like this!

"I lost this battle. Don't worry, I will not go after you and bring trouble to you, because you don't have Dao, and you are not worth my time to kill. Because... in the laws of the universe, those without Dao are equivalent to having no future.

"I will watch you walk towards destruction. I will watch you become lost someday in the future, and continue to be lost until you perish!" The Progenitor's laughter reverberated in space, while Su Ming continued remaining silent.

"What is Dao?" He turned his head around and looked at the old Sand Spirit.

"I am an Ancestral Spirit, and I don't practice Dao. I only know a bit of it... Dao is the guiding principles for your actions as a cultivator. It is the path under your feet. As for the others, I am unable to say it clearly.

"But I do know that only those who possess a Great Dao can become a Master of Fate. Even as an Ancestral Spirit, I have a path given to me by some unseen force in the universe.

"This is not destiny. It's a trail that cannot be described clearly and distinctly. You must tread down that trail and strengthen your Dao heart, only then will you be able to break all walls and head to the end," the old Sand Spirit explained slowly, after having remained silent for a moment.

Chapter 960 Your Master's Name is Yu Xuan, Right

The chaos among Heaven Traversers lasted for nearly half a month before the swarm of beasts slowly dispersed. Without their Progenitor, Heaven Traversers could not hope to stand up against beasts that numbered to more than a million. All forms of resistance were instantly crushed, and the entire race could only migrate in the face of the ferociousness and savagery of their attackers.

It was just like how Tian Xie Zi had been hunted down by the four great venerated races in the past. As he continued fleeing, he searched for a way to live.

However, there was also something different, and it was that the migrating Heaven Traversers were caught between despair and hope. They were in despair due to the fate they faced at that moment, while their hope lay in their Progenitor that may appear at any moment

During the past half a month, four-tenths of Heaven Traversers died due to the beast swarm. The death of these tens of thousands of people turned into a thick, bloody stench that filled the path the survivors took as they migrated through the galaxy.

To Heaven Traversers, this was an incredibly great blow. In fact, there was a high possibility that they would no longer be able to return to the galaxy in which they originally resided, because once the swarm of beasts occupied the territory, it also divided the area among itself.

It was just like how their Progenitor had seized this galaxy from the swarm of beasts that occupied it an endless amount of years ago.

Heaven Traversers did not dare to return to their homeland. The deaths of their people, many of whom were powerful warriors, caused the balance of power between the Heaven Traversers and the other venerated races to tilt.

While the matter of a beast swarm causing a ruckus in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean might not spread to the tribes in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean, the other three venerated races in the inner parts of the galaxy would definitely learn of it after some time.

The four races worked together, but they also had a feud between them that lasted for generations. Because of it, once the balance was lost, what would await Heaven Traversers would only be a devastating fate.

Their migration meant that Heaven Traversers would disappear without a trace for a period of time. They would search for a rural area to rest and recuperate, and when they accumulated power that would allow them to rise in power again, they would make a comeback.

While there were plenty of ferocious beasts in Heaven Traversers' original homeland and these creatures occupied their territory, the bald crane's abilities and its obsession with crystals allowed it to sweep through these hundred something cultivation planets like a typhoon. With three rushes back and forth, it took away all the crystals that it could take.

When it returned to Su Ming's side with the Abyss Dragon, it was still in a state of such great excitement that it was practically dancing with joy. Its body shivered ceaselessly due to its exhilaration.

"I'm rich! Damn it all, I'm rich! Three crystals! There were three crystals in the entire territory of Heaven Traversers!" As the bald crane spoke excitedly, it sneaked a peek at Su Ming.

The Abyss Dragon was originally also very excited, but when it heard the bald crane's words, it was momentarily stunned. It remembered that they had looted tens of millions of crystals, but immediately after, the dragon saw the look in the bald crane's eyes.

Su Ming paid no attention to them. He knew that the crane was afraid that he would demand crystals from it, which was why it mentioned only three crystals. This number would render other people speechless when they heard it, and would think that the level of miserliness from the bald crane had already reached a state where it would cause others to bristle in anger.

However, since Su Ming understood the bald crane, he knew that it must have been in conflict for a long time before it mentioned three crystals with incredible willpower. After all, this was the bald crane that would consider itself to have lost crystals if it did not manage to pick up any when it left its house.

Su Ming looked at the galaxy that once belonged to Heaven Traversers with a calm expression. He did not have a compassionate heart, and there was only a little kindness within him. He could not distribute it for all the living in the world.

"Let's go." Su Ming stood up and cast a glance at the old Sand Spirit who was sitting on the ball of sand. This old man lifted his head to look at Su Ming. At the instant their gazes met, the old man's body dissipated and scattered into space. However, a voice that echoed in Su Ming's heart came from the space around him.

"You can ask to attack twice more. Don't forget our promise. Write my name into the ballad."

Su Ming nodded. He swung his arm, and immediately, the Rune he branded on himself a long time ago was activated. Once he did that, a layer of ripples spread out beneath his feet. The ripples covered the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon as well, and in the blink of an eye, the light from the Rune grew to a blinding degree. At that instant, Su Ming, along with the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, disappeared from the ball of sand.

About ten breaths later, a loud bang spread out from the ball of sand. As the noise echoed in the air, cracking sounds shot up. Cracks appeared on the ball of sand. In the blink of an eye, they spread out until it looked like a cobweb covered the entire surface.

When a loud bang shot up in space, the gigantic ball of sand disintegrated, and Heaven Traversers' Progenitor appeared in the mid of sand.

His expression was dark, and there was extreme anger hidden within his eyes. He stared at the galaxy that originally belonged to Heaven Traversers, looked at the countless ferocious beasts that existed in it, smelled the bloody stench left behind in space by his people after they died, and did not say a word.

After a long while, the Progenitor let out a long sigh and did not choose to continue searching for Su Ming's tracks, because he knew that he could not kill him. Instead, there was a high possibility that he would be imprisoned once again, and at that time... He already believed wholeheartedly that Su Ming was not a merciful person, and was not the type to feel guilty after for killing many people.

At that time, what would await Heaven Traversers would be true genocide.

If it had been anyone else threatening the Progenitor, he would not believe in their threat, and he would also not leave matters as they were. However, just because others

had hunted down his Master in the past, he already killed four-tenths of the people a thousand years later. This sort of brutal person caused the Heaven Traversers' Progenitor to absolutely not make light of Su Ming's threat.

'Based on my guess, that Sand Spirit should have made some form of promise and will not attack multiple times, but even so... As long as he takes action the next time, then even if I manage to kill him in the future... all of my people would have died, and it'll just be like what he said-I will be the only Heaven Traverser left.

'He has a ruthless and diabolical heart, and he can wipe out an entire race... He can bear with the consequence that come with it... but I can't.'

Heaven Traversers' Progenitor fell silent. With his level of cultivation and his status, he had never felt threatened before. As of then, this feeling in his heart caused him to have incredibly complicated emotions within him. After a long while, he sighed inwardly, then moved to head in the direction of his people.

'He doesn't have a Dao heart. I will wait for the day he rots and perishes!' The Heaven Traversers' Progenitor left into the distance.

Within the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean was a quiet galaxy. In it was a large meteor. That meteor floated in the galaxy. There were some nests that belonged to some ferocious beasts within it, but half a month ago, a woman had arrived in the place, and with her power of Lunar Kalpa Realm, she had killed all the ferocious beasts and became the owner of the meteor.

Over there, Xu Hui laid out a Rune based on Su Ming's request before she sat down cross-legged and slowly counted down the time.

This place was far away from Heaven Traversers. The riot brought by the sea of beasts could not affect this place, which was why the galaxy appeared peaceful.

There was a gigantic Void Beast hidden in space beyond the meteor. That creature resembling a crocodile floated with its eyes shut at that moment. It did not move, but if any dangerous presences appeared, it would immediately wake. Needless to say, it was the ferocious beast that Xu Hui had tamed with Su Ming's help when they were on their way to the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Xu Hui had already been waiting for half a month. Based on the agreement she made with Su Ming, if he did not return a month later, she would no longer need to wait, but would have to immediately head back to meet up with the nine old Frail Darknesses.

However, Xu Hui had her own resolve. If Su Ming did not return a month later, then she would not choose to go back. Instead, she would head off to search for him.

She had been staring at the Relocation Rune in front of her for half a month. On this day, light suddenly erupted right before her eyes. At the instant it happened, Xu Hui's gaze focused. She might have seemed calm, but she was feeling slightly nervous in her heart.

When she stood up, the light from the Relocation Rune had grown to a piercing degree. The Void Beast beside the meteor also stared at it. Once the light reached its brightest, it disappeared, and Su Ming appeared in the Relocation Rune. Beside him were the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, who had taken the form of two mutts.

As for the Duke of Crimson Flame, he had already returned to become a totem on Su Ming's arm.

Xu Hui stared at Su Ming, and a smile appeared on her face.

Su Ming saw Xu Hui as well and walked to her side.

"I take it everything went well?"

"Yes."

"That's good then." Xu Hui did not ask for details. Instead, she cast her gaze on the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon. She stared at the bald crane, and the bald crane stared at her as well in an incredibly arrogant and provocative manner.

As for the Abyss Dragon, once it saw Xu Hui, it was momentarily stunned before it became extremely indignant in its heart, thinking to itself that Su Ming was truly sh*tty because he always had beautiful women by his side, and it could not help but regard Xu Hui in a hostile manner.

It had to help monitor all the members of the opposite sex beside Su Ming for its young master no matter what.

Xu Hui smiled lightly at the bald crane's provocative and defiant gaze, and was completely not bothered by it. However, she was slightly interested in the Abyss Dragon's animosity-filled gaze.

"It's not yours, right?" Xu Hui was a mature and charming woman. Her relaxed attitude and wisdom was something that no one else among the woman Su Ming had ever met possessed.

He nodded.

"Then let me guess. It's a girl's pet, and for some unknown reason, it came to your side..." As Xu Hui spoke, a strange light shone in her eyes. When she looked at the Abyss Dragon, it immediately felt as if the form it took had been seen through.

"An Abyss Dragon...? I remember now. One thousand years ago, I heard that the Emperor of Abyss' True World sent an Abyss Dragon into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to banish it and imprison it in this place. Could it be you?" Xu Hui's calm gaze immediately caused the Abyss Dragon to take a few instinctive steps backwards. It had a strong feeling that this woman before its eyes would be its young master's great enemy!

"The Abyss Dragons are a race that have an incredibly unique status in the Emperor of Abyss' True World, so unless they commit a great crime, it is impossible for them to be sent to this place. I remember that there was a piece of news that came out from the Emperor of Abyss' True World in the past. The third prince was about to get married, and the bride was a daughter of the greatest aristocratic family since ancient times in the Emperor of Abyss' True World, but the woman ran away from the marriage... If she could escape from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, then she must have had a World Traversing Abyss Dragon by her side.

"Coincidentally, one thousand years ago, this woman was found and returned to the Emperor of Abyss' True World, while you were sent here." Xu Hui smiled and looked at the Abyss Dragon. "Your master's name is Xu Hui, right?"

Chapter 961 They Are in the Same Group...

The Abyss Dragon almost sucked in a sharp breath. It staggered a few steps back before it looked at Xu Hui again, and when it did so, it looked as if it had seen a ghost. The shock on its face was a representation of the astonishment it felt.

It might not have a very intelligent mind, but it still knew that people who could deduce so many things in an instant by just casting a glance were definitely not someone ordinary.

Its young mistress also had this ability, but compared to the woman before it, its young mistress was still a little wet behind the ears.

"Looks like my guess is correct. Yu Xuan was the person who was supposed to marry the prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World and was also your young mistress." Xu Hui turned her head and looked to Su Ming with a smile on her face.

"So is Yu Xuan your lover?" When she said these words, there was not a single hint of change in her expression. That relaxed demeanor made Su Ming remember how this woman had not acted embarrassed or annoyed like a typical girl when they talked about him changing her clothes, even though she clearly knew that he had seen her whole body naked. Her relaxed and easygoing demeanor was definitely not something a naive girl would possess.

Su Ming cast a glance at Xu Hui, but did not say a single word. Instead, he sat down cross-legged and started meditating. Only half a month had passed since his battle against Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. He still had injuries within his body and had to recover as quickly as possible.

Besides, he had already dissolved the fusion of his three clones. His Ecang clone had returned to the foreign lands. If he nursed himself there, he would be able to recover much faster.

When Xu Hui saw that Su Ming did not choose to speak, she smiled and decided not to continue questioning him. Instead, she sat down beside him and protected him.

In the blink of an eye, several days passed. In truth, the reason why Su Ming had chosen this place to train was because he was waiting for Heaven Traversers' Progenitor to arrive. If the Progenitor had chosen to bow to his threat and compromise, then Su Ming could execute his subsequent plan without fear.

Three days was not long, but it was enough time to tell what course of action Heaven Traversers' Progenitor took.

If the Progenitor came here, then Su Ming would have the Sand Spirit trap him again without hesitation, and then, he would personally lure a sea of ferocious beasts to destroy all Heaven Traversers.

And since Su Ming had already thought of this plan, then even if the Progenitor had the idea of first hiding his Heaven Traversers before he chased down Su Ming, there was no way that he would not be prepared for this in case it happened.

Three days later, Su Ming opened his eyes. He lifted his right hand, formed a seal, and a sparkle appeared in his eyes. After a moment, his expression returned to normal, but a freezing glare flashed briefly in his eyes.

"Xu Hui, I will continue heading deeper into the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Do you want to come with me or to go back and meet up with the nine old Frail Darknesses?" Su Ming turned his head around to look at Xu Hui.

"Since I'm already here, of course I won't go back alone." Xu Hui smiled elegantly.

Su Ming nodded. As he got back up, he took a step forward and landed on the Void Beast's head. The Void Beast shuddered, and a submissive expression appeared on its face. After all, over the course of the past few years, Su Ming was the one feeding it most of the time. It was rather fond of Su Ming, and had long since ignored the fact that he was one of the two responsible for the torment it went through when they tamed it in the past.

With one step, Xu Hui landed beside Su Ming. As for the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, the both of them occasionally discussed the issue of dividing their spoils between them. At that moment, they were both incredibly satisfied with themselves and also ran up to the Void Beast's body, but the Abyss Dragon kept a wide berth from Xu Hui. Clearly, the trauma it suffered previously still remained in its mind, and it did not dare to provoke her.

But the bald crane had always held onto the idea that it was the Abyss Dragon's leader, and when it saw its lackey being so afraid of Xu Hui, the thought of standing up for it rose in its head. However, most of what it showed as an act of standing up for the Abyss Dragon was just provocation and deviance. It was as if only by doing so would it be able to show its statue, but it had indeed managed to make the Abyss Dragon look at it with a fanatic gaze.

"I saw four interesting cultivators just now," Su Ming said while standing on the Void Beast. As he spoke faintly, the Void Beast rushed forward swiftly, and it was so quick that it instantly left the meteor.

"Four cultivators?" Xu Hui blinked.

"Four cultivators with a secret. They invited me to travel with them, and I promised them to do so, but they went back on their word and did not fulfill their end of the promise," Su Ming said calmly.

Xu Hui smiled until her eyes were shaped like crescent moons. She could imagine that the truth was definitely not what Su Ming had just said. The four cultivators should have been forced to make the suggestion due to fear. That so-called invitation would have also been just a temporary measure.

"Yes, as cultivators, they should be people who honor their promises. How could the four of them do such a thing?" Xu Hui said by the side with a nod.

"That's right. They went a little overboard." Su Ming remained as composed as ever while speaking with a cold sneer.

"We'll have to teach them a lesson," Xu Hui chimed in.

"I'm thinking of leaving behind some seals on them," Su Ming said.

Xu Hui pondered for a moment before she made a suggestion. "That won't do. Why don't we leave some marks on them? I once saw an Art that could turn a man into a woman. This Art is incredibly useful, and I practiced it on other people many times before... Perhaps we can have their Nascent Divinities and bodies switch. It'll be like Possession. They will definitely remember this sort of punishment for the rest of their lives."

Her discussion with Su Ming fell into the bald crane's ears, whose gaze still held a provocation, and it also fell into the Abyss Dragon's ears. A shudder then wrecked the two mutts.

It was especially so for the bald crane, whose provocative intent quickly disappeared and was replaced by a look of flattery. It suddenly realized that this woman called Xu Hui was actually very sinister...

It looked at the woman and Su Ming's backs and listened to the duo's discussion, suddenly feeling that the two of them were incredibly suited for each other. As the bald crane mulled over that, it transformed into its original appearance so that it was no longer a mutt, all so that it would not provoke this woman and would be able to make a clean break with the Abyss Dragon.

The Abyss Dragon took several steps back again. In the depths of its heart, it had already elevated Xu Hui's status to a level where she was absolutely not to be provoked. The meaning behind the words she spoke sent a chill down its spine.

It could already imagine that if the four cultivators were truly tormented in this fashion, they would find it to be the most terrifying nightmare in their lives.

"This is... not very good, right?" Su Ming hesitated for a moment.

"How could it not be good? It's fine. It'll all be fine. Just watch me later. I did this kind of thing all the time in the past... Ahem..." As Xu Hui spoke, excitement appeared on her face, as if she was feeling incredibly enthusiastic about this.

"That is..." Su Ming turned his head to look at Xu Hui. Forget the bald crane, even Su Ming himself found Xu Hui's suggestion to be a little too cruel.

"Oh you, don't hesitate anymore. Just watch me. I'm very good at this. You don't have to worry about it. I'll definitely make them remember this lesson and know that cultivators must honor their promises." Xu Hui licked her lips. This action and the excitement on her face complimented each other, making her incredibly attractive. However, the words she said were ones that made Su Ming laugh wryly.

"... Alright, then." Su Ming shook his head. Then with the cues he received in his Atman through the Brand he left on the four in the past, he guided the Void Beast and charged forward.

In a galaxy some distance away from Su Ming and his group were Xuan Shang and the other three. They were pressing forward on their journey at that moment. They were all incredibly fast, and they moving as four long arcs. They were so fast that wherever they passed, not a single ripple would be formed in the galaxy due to their movements.

"It has been half a month now. Are we really leaving like this and not waiting for that person?" Yun You asked softly in uncertainty.

"That is a person filled with malice. With him around, we might not be able to obtain anything this time..."

"But I think that since he let us go, he would definitely have a way to find us. Hah..."

"Don't worry. In three more days, we will be able to step into a Relocation Vortex. At that time, we'll be far away from this place. Even if he has a divine ability that can find us or even left a Brand on us, as long as we have a sufficient amount of distance between us and he doesn't know about the Relocation Vortices here, he won't be able to find us."

"This is the only way now. Besides, if he fought against Heaven Traversers, there is no way that he wouldn't be injured. He might be nursing his wounds right now and not have the energy to pay any attention to us."

"That's right. Don't worry. Even if he manages to catch up to us, it'll still be fine. He didn't mention where we were supposed to wait for him but said he would look for us. If that's the case, it's not our fault."

The four sent words to each other with their minds as they charged forward. After discussing among themselves for a moment, they traveled even faster. Even though their hearts were still a little uneasy, they rushed towards the Relocation Vortex that was three days away from where they were.

Time trickled by, and when the third day arrived, light shone in the four cultivators' eyes. Based on the map they obtained, once they went through the Relocation Vortex, they would enter the core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. That place would not be too far away from Dust Burners' territory.

"We're here. It's right ahead of us. That fiendish person still isn't here, so it's not as if we weren't waiting for him." Hua Yu smiled, and the other three let out a sigh of relief in their hearts.

Even though they might be saying that they were relaxed and no longer worried, in truth, during most of the past month, they were in a state of extreme nervousness. After all, the pressure and terror Su Ming brought to them in the past was incredibly great.

After a moment, the four of them stopped in the galaxy. Xuan Shang looked around him, then raised his right hand and swung his arm forward. A layer of dust immediately scattered into space. Then, some of the dust he scattered was swallowed by a small area not too far away from where they stood.

That spot was only the size of a fingernail. If they did not look carefully, it would be difficult for them to spot it in the vast galaxy.

"It's this place!" Excitement shone in Xuan Shang's eyes. But just as he was about to take a step forward into the vortex, a voice caused the four of them to completely stiffen up.

"The four of you move so fast. Could it be that you've already forgotten the promise we made?"

Once this voice spoke, ripples spread through the galaxy. In an instant, a crocodile-like Void Beast that was tens of thousands of feet tall appeared from space and entered the group's field of vision.

They saw Su Ming looking at them coldly from the Void Beast's head, along with an incredibly beautiful woman grinning with a hint of excitement, as well as two creatures standing behind the duo... the Abyss Dragon, who had now taken the form of a mutt, and the bald crane.

At the instant the group saw the bald crane, their expressions changed drastically, as if Su Ming was no longer of any importance in their hearts. All their attention was completely absorbed by the bald crane.

With just one glance, they were able to recognize that this bald crane was the ferocious beast they previously saw in the galaxy, the one that was chased by one million beasts!

'They are in the same group...' thought all four cultivators at once.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 962 Scorpion Lady, Xu Hui - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 962 Scorpion Lady, Xu Hui

Chapter 962 Scorpion Lady, Xu Hui

The galaxy was filled with silence at that instant. Su Ming stared at the four cultivators, and the four cultivators stared back at him. No one spoke. After some time, Xu Hui's fake cough broke the silence, and it caused the four cultivators to recover from their shock.

They were not shocked due to Su Ming's arrival. After all, this was within the scope of what they had expected to happen, and they were already prepared for it. What they were shocked about was the bald crane.

The ferocious beast they idolized slightly and even dreamed about taming when they became stronger in the future already... already had a master. They did not know of the bald crane's specific level of cultivation. Even if they noticed that it was not really that

strong when they saw it now and sensed its power with their hearts, they still believed that the crane they initially saw leading one million beasts into a state of frenzy was definitely not an ordinary crane, since there were two things in the universe called hiding a one's true power and seals.

At that moment, as their hearts were in a state of shock and Xu Hui's fake cough echoed in space, the four cultivators moved back practically on instinct. Xuan Shang only managed to take three steps back before he forced himself to stop. He knew that he could not escape, and he couldn't bring himself to even give rise to the thought of attacking. Even if the four of them had their killing moves... Su Ming alone was enough to make their minds crumble, and that bald crane was also around.

The grin on the woman beside Su Ming also terrified him.

Xuan Shang was not the only one who was sensible among the four cultivators. Hua Yu snapped to his senses after he retreated one hundred something feet. When he saw that Su Ming and the others did not chase after them, he forced himself to a halt while feeling anxious, then wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards Su Ming and his group.

Yun You and Nian Yin were slightly slower in terms of reaction. At that moment, they were already a hundred thousand feet away. But just as they were about to charge even farther ahead with Fleeing Blood, ripples shone in the space in front of them, and Xu Hui walked out from them.

She was still grinning, but there was a murderous look in her eyes. She was slightly angry. After all, these four people had only started fleeing after she coughed.

"Why did you run after seeing me?"

Once Xu Hui walked out, she lifted her right hand and swung it before herself. With it, the image of the moon appeared in front of her, and Yun You and Nian Yin's expressions instantly changed.

"Lunar Kalpa Realm!"

The two of them instantly moved and split up to run in two different directions. The one called Yun You noticed that two of his companions had already given up on escaping, so with a bitter laugh, he stopped as well.

Only Nian Yin continued charging forward at full speed, even coughing up blood to execute Fleeing Blood. His speed increased exponentially, but before he could move ten thousand feet away from Xu Hui, his body manifested from the blood shadow, and as he screamed in pain, he coughed up blood again. Strangely, there was nothing bizarre around him, but his body still tumbled backwards, as if he had been bounced back by an invisible barrier.

As he fell back, his hair looked as if it was seized by an invisible hand, which was dragging him back.

When the cultivator called Nian Yin was thrown to the spot in front of the Void Beast where Su Ming was, most of his hair had been ripped off. Blood filled the entirety of his face, and it was flowing down his cheeks. His face was filled with shock and disbelief as he stared at Xu Hui, who walked out of the space beside him.

"Go on, run. Why aren't you running anymore?" Xu Hui asked with a grin, then raised her right hand and pointed at Nian Yin. Two wisps of red and white smoke surrounded him, and at the instant they touched his body, the red smoke fused into his chest, and the white smoke disappeared into his throat and lower region.

The expressions of the other three cultivators changed drastically, and they even let out shocked cries, because they immediately saw Nian Yin's originally flat chest... rise up!

His Adam's apple shrank before their eyes until it disappeared, and his rough skin turned light in the blink of an eye. His fingers turned smooth, so they looked lithe and soft. From all of these physical changes, it was evident that... the Yin and Yang aura of this person had been reversed, and he changed from a man... to a woman!

Nian Yin was momentarily stunned before he let out a shrill scream of pain. Yet even his screams had a sharp edge to them. They were no longer as sonorous and deep as those of a man's voice, but had become as gentle as those of a woman.

His changes were quite evident regarding his posterior, too. As his body changed, it clearly grew in size. In fact, the lines of his body had become curved.

All of this brought about an indescribable shock and terror to the other three cultivators. And even Su Ming felt his eyelids twitch. His heart thumped rapidly a few times in his chest, and when he looked towards Xu Hui after that, a hint of wariness appeared in his eyes.

The bald crane also widened its eyes. This scene caused it to shudder, and even the Abyss Dragon by its side instinctively moved back. When it looked at Xu Hui, its gaze was filled with terror.

"A cultivator prefers death to humiliation !"

Nian Yin's expression was filled with bitterness. He was the one who knew all the changes in his body the clearest. At that moment, he could no longer describe the complicated feelings in his heart. There was grief and indignation within him as he shouted at Xu Hui.

Su Ming frowned. He could kill a person without hesitation... but he would not be able to humiliate someone like this. But just as he was about to speak, the cultivator whose physical characteristics had been changed shouted again.

"I have no grudge or enmity with you, and we only ran into each other due to coincidence! If you do this, aren't you afraid of being punished by heaven?! Aren't you afraid of receiving retribution?! Come! If you want to kill me, then kill me!"

Xu Hui chuckled softly.

"You make yourself sound really reasonable. When my husband met you the first time, he did not attack you. It's normal for you to want to run, since you harbor secrets within you, but not being able to escape means that you are simply not good enough. We caught up to you, and my husband was not even thinking of punishing you too greatly. He just intended to question you a little. If you answered frankly, with my understanding towards him, you would have parted ways peacefully.

"Besides, you are in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Your power is not sufficient for you to dig out any sort of secrets. If my husband joined you, the possibility of you becoming successful would increase by several fold. What's not good about it?

"But I only coughed once and you ran. You didn't manage to escape in the end, but now you're shouting with righteous indignation," Xu Hui said with a smile.

Xuan Shang and the other two fell silent, and a contemplative look appeared on their faces. Xu Hui's words were not domineering in their ears, and the truth was just as she said, so the trio could not help but start to think about it.

However, Nian Yin's heart was in turmoil due to his physical characteristics having been changed. He refused to register even a single word from Xu Hui speech and let out a cold snort. Yet the moment he did that, Xu Hui's next sentence immediately caused his expression to change drastically.

"The Art you practice should be the Great Annual Wheel Dharma Art. I only noticed it just now, and judging from this, your family name is Nian, and you came from True Morning Dao World.

"Let me think. The Nian Hua Family from True Morning Dao World is a family built by a sect that dissociated themselves from the Immortals in the past. Three thousand something years ago, a family member killed another member of his family, and when he was captured, his cultivation base was destroyed and he was sent into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence as a punishment. That person is you, right?

"But your cultivation base is still around. Looks like the Nian Hua Family is behind you in this operation of yours."

"Who are you?!" As Nian Yin's expression changed, Xuan Shang and the other two cultivators' pupils shrank in fear. They looked towards Xu Hui simultaneously.

"Me? My name is Xu Hui, and I'm from Phoenix Sect." Xu Hui smiled faintly and looked at Su Ming, who was frowning clearly slightly displeased in his heart.

"Phoenix Sect?! Xu Hui... You are Phoenix Sect's Sacred Lady!"

Nian Yin was momentarily stunned, then all his anger drained away from him. He became dispirited, and in his anguish, he gave up on all forms of resistance. In fact, from the changes of his expression, it was clear that he was filled with alarm and fear towards Phoenix Sect.

"That's right. It is the Phoenix Sect which all cultivators secretly refer to as the Sinister Sect in True Morning Dao World, and I am the Scorpion Lady Xu Hui, one of the two you secretly refer to as the Snake and Scorpion Ladies," Xu Hui said with a grin. This was the first time Su Ming heard this, and he was stunned. These things did not exist in Dao Kong's memories, which was perhaps related to Dao Kong's status and experiences.

In fact, Su Ming had always been slightly puzzled as to why Dao Kong had so few memories. After all, the more memories a living creature had, the more difficult it would be to Possess that person, and Dao Kong's memories were only the basics of what a person would have.

Scorpion Lady Xu Hui—this was how the cultivators in True Morning Dao Sect secretly referred to one of the two great Sacred Ladies in Phoenix Sect. Based on the title itself, there was definitely a reason behind why Phoenix Sect was privately known as the Sinister Sect.

Su Ming was silent. He suddenly understood why Xu Hui had no qualms whatsoever when she did something. If she had such a 'great' reputation in the world outside, then it was surely related to her actions when she was in True Morning Dao Sect.

Scorpions were venomous, but the venom did not lie in their mouths, and neither was it in their claws. Instead, it was contained in their tails. They were incredibly quick and small, which would mean that they would not bring about too much attention from others. However, at a critical moment, just the slightest mistake on their enemies' part would mean death from venom. This was the terrifying aspect of scorpions.

Snakes were skilled in hiding and waiting. Usually, they would hide their venomous fangs and would not casually reveal them. They would lie still without moving for long periods of time, but once they moved, they would kill. This comparison reminded Su Ming of another girl, which was related to a pain-filled first love.

He had known a long time ago that there were two Sacred Ladies in Phoenix Sect. One of them was Xu Hui, and the other... was the Snake Lady Bai Ling. This was something he knew from Dao Kong's memories.

In fact, Su Ming knew that there was a high possibility that Xu Hui had known about his name since a long time ago, whether it would be because Bai Ling had told her or because Xu Hui would have secretly investigated him. Either way, there was a high chance that she knew about him.

That was why Xu Hui had been able to say right from the get go that Su Ming was thinking about a woman when they were in the mountain of the Ninth Tribe. It was also that one sentence of her that had sunk him into a dream that should not have been seen by cultivators, but had been seen by him.

It was at that time that Su Ming came to know that he was obsessed with the promise itself, and not Bai Ling. He had then put an end to that burden in his heart and walked through a change of heart.

Su Ming did not believe that this was a coincidence, but no matter what, he could tell that Xu Hui's actions were mostly filled with good intentions in regards to that matter. That was why he had never pointed it out.

1. A cultivator prefers death to humiliation: The original is 'a scholar prefers death to humiliation'. Since we're in this context, I thought it would be more appropriate to say cultivator instead of scholar.

Chapter 963 Resentful Wei

Everyone has their own secrets, and there is no need for anyone to forcibly obtain them. Even if the four cultivators had a secret, if they insisted on not telling it, Su Ming would not force them. In truth, the thing he saw as the most important was the fact that the four of them were heading to Dust Burners, and he too wanted to go to them.

A person's age would not show whether they had truly become mature, and neither would their maturity show in the wrinkles that appeared on their bodies as time passed. It would instead show in whether a person learned how to tolerate another.

There were some things that did not need to be spoken. As long as people were willing to tolerate it, then everything would be fine.

Su Ming did not know how to be tolerant towards others in the past, but after going through so many things, he had learned how to be tolerant in certain areas.

'If you do not want to tell, then I won't ask.'

In truth, the difference between knowing about something then keeping it a secret and knowing about something then talking incessantly about it lay between whether a person was mature or immature.

Su Ming sat down cross-legged on the Void Beast and said faintly, "Alright, Xu Hui. Turn him back."

Xu Hui turned her head around to cast Su Ming a glance. A smile appeared on her face. How could she not know about the things Su Ming knew? But there was only happiness in this mode of communication. There were no schemes, and neither were there any other sort of thought contained within it.

Such moments were rarely found in her life.

That was why Xu Hui wanted to treasure this. She did not want to lose this atmosphere of their communication after the truth had been brought out.

They were foolish. They were being rarely foolish.

She nodded obediently, then raised her right hand which she swung at Nian Yin. Two wisps of smoke that were purple and blue landed on the cultivator, causing his Adam's apple to appear, the bumps on his chest to become flat, his posterior to shrink, and his skin to become rough once again from its formerly smooth state.

Once Xu Hui finished doing all this, she returned to Su Ming's side.

"If the four of you feel like telling me your secret, you can say it. If you don't want to, I won't make things difficult for you... but I want to know how to get to Dust Burners. I've been watching the path you took. You should have a map with you. Tell me the route and I will immediately leave," Su Ming said calmly.

The markers regarding Dust Burners on the map Dijiu Mo Sha had given him were incredibly fuzzy. After all, this tribe was not like Heaven Traversers who were located in the outer layer of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Dust Burners were located in a region close to the core of the Star Ocean. It was... a place where Ninth Tribe had never gone before.

Which was why their markings regarding Dust Burners only provided Su Ming with a general outline but not the specifics. If he was to search for them blindly, the difficulty would be incredibly great, and the dangers in it would also be very high.

Once Nian Yin's body returned to normal, his face turned pale and he immediately returned to his group's side. He did not dare look at Xu Hui. Perhaps the other true worlds did not know the details of this woman's reputation, but as someone from True Morning Dao World, he knew well that this woman could be said to be an existence that would cause others' faces to change color when they spoke about her. She killed others

as if she was swatting flies, and the level of malice as well as viciousness within her heart was enough to cause others to tremble in fear.

However, while being wary of Xu Hui, he was shocked by Su Ming. Xu Hui, who was known as the Scorpion Lady, was a merciless and heartless person. The open strife and veiled fights between her and the Snake Lady were never-ending. Besides their own Masters, it was unheard of that anyone else could make them be obedient.

Yet with one sentence, Su Ming had actually made Xu Hui turn him back. If he told others about this, no one would believe him.

When Nian Yin lowered his head, Xuan Shang and the others exchanged glances with each other. They remained silent for a moment before Xuan Shang patted his storage bag and brought out a jade slip. Once he focused his attention and Branded it, he threw the slip towards Su Ming.

"This is the map that will lead you to Dust Burners. Senior, the spot next to you is a Relocation Vortex. When you walk out of the other end, there will be detailed marks on the map leading you to the place."

Su Ming took the jade slip. Once he scanned it with his Atman, he looked at the four people in close scrutiny. Then, the Void Beast beneath him slowly turned around and floated towards the Relocation Vortex.

When they were beside the Relocation Vortex, the Void Beast came to a halt, and Su Ming said softly, "All of you, you should go in first."

Xuan Shang nodded. He could guess that Su Ming would definitely not believe in him so easily. After all, if he was in Su Ming's place, he would do the same thing. He was not against it, since he did not do anything to the map. At that moment, he looked at the trio beside him, completely unperturbed, and once they exchanged glances with each other, they chose to obey.

The four of them turned into long arcs and charged at the Relocation Vortex. When they closed in, they did not hesitate. Xuan Shang was the first to step in, while Nian Yin came right after. The other two stepped in moments later.

After they disappeared, the Void Beast beneath Su Ming looked as if it sucked in a deep breath. Its body shrank, and when it became only about hundreds of feet in size, it crawled into the Relocation Vortex. Its body instantly fused inside before disappearing without a trace.

Within the vortex was the colorful world. In a gigantic, semi-transparent tunnel were Xuan Shang and the other three, and all of them had their eyes closed while allowing their bodies to glide through as they were pulled forward. Behind them was the Void Beast that was now hundreds of feet in size. Standing on its back was Xu Hui, who had

her eyes wide open while she observed her surroundings. As for the bald crane, it naturally did not close its eyes due to its personality. Instead, it stared at its surroundings.

The Abyss Dragon did not know about the necessity of closing its eyes, and also looked around.

Su Ming had never taken to the habit of closing his eyes in the place. At the instant he entered the world in the vortex, he immediately looked into the distance - at the dark depths where the familiar ripples of power lay.

The corners of Su Ming's lips curled up slightly. He sensed the dragon-headed black horse's presence. That black horse clearly remembered Su Ming very deeply. This time, right when Su Ming entered the vortex, it immediately charged forth from the distance at full speed.

"It's coming again." Xu Hui's voice was calm, but a hint of anxiety flashed briefly in her eyes.

She remembered clearly that when the black horse had caught up to Su Ming the last time, he had nearly been unable to leave this world.

"Who? Who's coming?" The bald crane widened its eyes and looked around continuously. While it was searching, a roar that stirred up a large number of ripples echoed in the world.

This roar shocked and terrified the people's hearts, causing the tunnel to tremble and made the colorful jellyfish-like existences around them to quickly retreat.

It also caused Xuan Shang and the other three's expressions to change, but they kept their eyes firmly shut.

Su Ming directed his attention towards the noise, and a smile appeared at the corners of his lips. The more he saw the black horse, the fonder he grew of it. The desire to tame it also grew stronger in his heart. If it was not because the black horse possessed power equivalent to Masters of Fate, Su Ming would have taken forceful actions a long time ago.

"Sooner or later, you will be mine."

Su Ming stood up. He could sense that as the black horse roared from the distance, the Void Beast beneath him started trembling violently, conveying just how terrified it was. Clearly, the shock and fear brought by the roar was even greater for a beast.

"Don't provoke it. The last time, you..." Xu Hui could not help but worry, which was evident on her face. And it was not fake, but a true manifestation of what she was feeling in her heart.

"You don't have to bother."

Resolve appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He stared at the darkness in the distance, vaguely able to tell that there was a long arc there charging towards him at an indescribable speed.

There were six dim balls of light in the long arc. Those were the horse's six eyes. The arrogance within them were the source of Su Ming's resolve.

This time, the horse had been clearly farther away from Su Ming. That was why based on his experience, he knew that it would be difficult for the horse to reveal itself before they left the vortex. After all, the distance between them was simply too great.

Su Ming wanted to see the horse, and he also wanted the black horse to see him.

He wanted that prideful black horse to remember his provocation. He wanted the horse to immediately appear when he stepped into the vortex. To do this, he needed the black horse to have an incredibly deep impression of him, and for this prideful existence, provocation would become the source of an obsession it would never be able to ignore.

Su Ming moved swiftly. Once he walked off the Void Beast, he threw his head back and let out a long roar. That roar shook the entire world. It continued reverberating in the void, stirring up an endless amount of echoes.

This immediately caused the four cultivators' expressions to change. They could not help but start cursing in their hearts. This was the world in the vortex. It was a place where they were not allowed to open their eyes and let out a single sound, or else they would run into incredible danger.

This was something they learned a long time ago in incredible detail when they were just introduced to Relocation Vortices. Yet now, Su Ming's long roar behind them completely broke the silence within this quiet world in the vortex.

That long roar was also filled with a thick air of provocation, which penetrated through the endless depths and landed in the black horse's ears as it charged forward. Boundless anger appeared in its eyes, and it responded to Su Ming with a roar as well as a speed that increased by almost one hundred times.

Su Ming smiled. This was the black horse's true speed.

Time trickled by. One breath passed, then another, and another. When everyone was near the Relocation Vortex's exit, Su Ming saw a long arc at the corner of his vision, and

it was coming at them with an indescribable speed. Along with that long arc was a sea of fire that surged into the sky, as well as a black horse with two dragon heads.

This horse was several thousands of feet tall. It stood on fire, and black smoke as well as flames escaped its nostrils when it breathed. A fierce light shone in its eyes. When it lifted its head, it let out its third roar, and galloped on flames while charging towards Su Ming.

From the distance, it looked as if the world in the vortex was burning. When the flames crackled, they swept in all directions.

"You-you-you..."

When the black horse's body was completely revealed, the bald crane shuddered violently. It flapped its wings, widened its eyes, put on a face full of disbelief, and pointed at the black horse.

"Damn it all, that's a Resentful Wei ! There are still Resentful Weis in the world?! Two dragon heads... This means it's still a baby. Damn it! How can this be possible!" the bald crane cried out in a shrill voice, yelling out the things it remembered as some fragmented memories appeared in its head at the instant it saw the black horse.

"What's a Resentful Wei?!" Su Ming asked while staring at the black horse. He knew that the bald crane had a mysterious past and at that its memories were fragmented. It would only occasionally remember certain things.

"Beyond the four Great True Worlds, and even past the Fifth True World were three Great Ancient Kingdoms. One of them was Wei. This kingdom had countless cultivators, but in a single night, all of them died. Once the entire ancient kingdom was reduced to ashes, all the cultivators' souls gathered together to turn into resentment. This resentment lay in silence for several centuries until eventually forming into Resentful Weis!"

Su Ming's pupils swiftly contracted.

1. Resentful Wei (怨魏, Yuan4 Wei4): Two words originally from Shiji/Historical Records/Records of the Great Historian (all the same). It's not a term, per se, because the original phrase is 以怨魏齐故, and the 怨魏 here is a verb + noun. It means 'Because he hated Wei Qiqu for almost beating him to death'.

怨 can only mean grudge or resentment, but for 魏, it can be 1) a country's name in Ancient China, 2) a surname, 3) big and tall.

Since 魏 is clearly the name of a country here, Resentful Wei was chosen.

"The Resentful Weis are not accepted by the universe, because it was heaven's will that Ancient Wei was destroyed. Yet the souls of Wei did not perish but gathered together to become resentment. This meant that they were standing up against the universe, and so had to be destroyed!

"Those who kill a Resentful Wei can obtain the universe's kismet. No matter what they do, everything will go according to their plan. It was also why the two other Ancient Kingdoms had surrounded and exterminated them in the past.

"This race was then completely destroyed, and not a single Resentful Wei was left. But-but there's a Resentful Wei in here! Kill it! If you manage to kill it, then no matter how many years pass, you will have the universe's kismet on you. It'll be especially helpful since people who have the universe's kismet are incredibly rare in the years after the Great Destruction!

"Su Ming, your cultivation base clone was born with a kismet. Since that's the case, if you kill this creature, you will get even more of it! This kismet thing might be insubstantial, but it'll guarantee you success in everything that you want to do for ten thousand years!"

There was a solemn never seen before expression on the bald crane's face. The sleaziness that always existed when it spoke was no longer present in its words. Instead, there was an upright and dignified presence within them.

However, that presence was swiftly dissipating. The bald crane shuddered, and confusion appeared in its eyes. It was as if the one who had said those words just then had not been the bald crane itself!

"What is the relationship between the three Great Ancient Kingdoms and five Great True Worlds?" Su Ming immediately asked.

"The nine Great True Worlds are the earth of the Lower Realm, and the three Great Ancient Kingdoms are the sky of the Higher Realm. Only when they are joined together do they form the additional Expanse Cosmos... Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, the one that is beyond Dark Dawn's 180 Expanse Cosmoes, and Saint Defier's 180 Expanse Cosmoes!

"No matter whether it is Saint Defier who loses one Cosmos or Dark Dawn obtaining one more Cosmos, whoever will obtain one hundred and eighty-one Cosmoes first... will be able to wage war!" When the bald crane said these words, its head lolled to the side and it immediately fainted. Its body was caught by the Abyss Dragon.

Su Ming's heart trembled. Xu Hui's expression also changed as she stood by the side. Clearly, the bald crane's words were secrets they had never heard before. Those words might seem incredibly ordinary, but if one was to mull over the profound meaning behind them, then it would definitely cause a storm in the person's mind.

Dark Dawn's 180 Expanse Cosmoses as well as Saint Defier's 180 Expanse Cosmoses meant that Su Ming's knowledge had just been endlessly expanded within an instant. It allowed him to learn just how big and vast was the universe.

It did not matter whether it was Morning Dao World or Sacred Yin World. Even if he added in the Emperor of Abyss' World, the mysterious Fourth True World and the Fifth True World that had disappeared, the other four True Worlds that had vanished during the Great Destruction, they still did not form the complete Arid Triad. They needed to add in the three Ancient Kingdoms to form a complete Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

And... there were three hundred and sixty other Cosmoses that were about the size of this complete Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. The universe... was infinitely huge!

Even for a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, where would this single person's power be ranked among all the other people in the 361 Expanse Cosmoses?

Su Ming and Xu Hui were not the only ones who were struck silent by the bald crane's words. Xuan Shang and the other three in front of them also experienced unprecedented shock. They could not help but open their eyes completely and turn their heads around to look at the bald crane.

They had heard its words. Their expressions changed, which was a telling sign that they could not accept this truth for a time being. They thought that the four Great True Worlds constituted the edge of the universe, and what they were surprised about was the Fifth True World which existed as a legend in their minds.

Yet at that moment, their beliefs were completely crushed. In truth, besides the five True Worlds, there were four other True Worlds. Besides them, there were also three Great Ancient Kingdoms. And only when the three Great Ancient Kingdoms and the nine Great True Worlds fused together would a complete Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos be formed. And even then... besides the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, there were still Dark Dawn's 180 Expanse Cosmoses and Saint Defier's 180 Expanse Cosmoses. There were 360 Expanse Cosmoses in total!

The first thing that rose in the minds of the four people was doubt. However, Su Ming and Xu Hui's expressions as well as the ancient air that came with the bald crane's words when it spoke just then told the cultivators' instincts... that at least eight-tenths of all that was said was real, even though there was no proof to verify whether it was so!

In the mid of their silence, the fourth roar from the Resentful Wei echoed in the air. The dragon-headed black horse that was thousands of feet big appeared in everyone's field

of vision, swiftly closing in on them. The pride and the air that allowed no provocation in its six eyes was incredibly strong.

Su Ming quietly watched the black horse getting closer to him. As he stared at it, the bald crane's words echoed in his head. He suddenly felt that there was some degree of similarity between him and the black horse.

This creature had been sent away by its kin when it was still a newborn at the time its race was being destroyed. It then became its race's sole survivor, and Su Ming... was also the same.

Others had worked together to kill its kin, and it was the same case for the Abyss Builders.

Both the black horse and Su Ming had grown up in places that were not their homelands, and they both had yet to enter them.

Su Ming's silence and his thoughts were shown in his eyes. The instant the black horse saw this, it came to a halt, but soon, it raised its head up high. It gave off the air of looking down at Su Ming and carried itself with a bearing that it did not ask for pity.

It stared at Su Ming coldly, then rushed forward. It had become even faster.

However, while the distance between them might have seemed close, they were actually far away from each other. In the world within the vortex, distances that did not seem great were in truth incredibly far apart. The black horse's speed might be unparalleled, but since the distance between them was incredibly great, it could not catch up to Su Ming and his group within a dozen something breaths.

Besides, Su Ming could vaguely sense that there seemed... to be a certain limit on speed in this world. They could not shift in here.

He could see that there seemed to be barriers around the black horse, and it was crashing into them continuously. This was clearly the reason why its speed was limited. As it moved forward, it would be as if it crashed one barrier after another.

Su Ming did not choose to provoke it again. Instead, as Xuan Shang and the other three disappeared, he vanished from the world in the vortex as well.

A roar mixed with a note of grief that no one else could hear but Su Ming came from the black horse's mouth and lingered in the air for a long time.

The galaxy in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean appeared like a clear lake. There was not a single speck of dust there, so those who saw could not help but get immersed in this beauty that they would be unable to see in other places.

This place was incredibly far away from Heaven Traversers. If they had flown normally, Su Ming would have needed to press on without stopping for an entire year with his speed.

At that moment, once the group appeared, Su Ming quietly looked at the exit of the Relocation Vortex. The bald crane's words continued echoing in his head and refused to vanish.

Xu Hui was in a slightly absent-minded state, thinking hard about something.

"Huh? We're out? Well, damn it all, how did I fall asleep?"

The bald crane opened its eyes at that moment, but there was a deep fatigue on its face. It jumped around a few times and mumbled under its breath, incredibly puzzled.

However, after only mumbling a few sentences, it saw the Abyss Dragon looking at it with a slightly complicated look on its face. Xu Hui, the four cultivators, and even Su Ming were also looking at it.

"What's wrong? Why are you all staring at me?" The bald crane felt slightly scared, and goosebumps appeared all over its skin. It was feeling incredibly nervous, and a wary expression appeared on its face. It took a few steps back and had its claws press firmly on the ground.

"I don't have crystals! I don't have crystals..." the bald crane shouted loudly.

Su Ming stared at the bald crane for a moment before averting his gaze and sitting down cross-legged on the Void Beast. He patted the beast, and it started moving. It turned around and glided into the distance.

Once they came out the time for Su Ming to part ways with the four cultivators also arrived. Su Ming might have killed many people in his life, having cut living creatures like swatting flies, and appeared to enjoy killing, but the truth wasn't like that. As long as no one provoked him, directly or indirectly, he would not attack. There were no grudges shared between the four cultivators and Su Ming, so he did not harbor the intention to kill them. Once the Void Beast left into the distance, layers of ripples gradually appeared in the galaxy.

Xu Hui hesitated for a moment, but after sneaking a peak at Su Ming, she did not say anything. Instead, she sat down beside him. As for the bald crane, it had currently seized the Abyss Dragon and was asking it something in a whisper. There was not even the need to hear them to be able to guess that the bald crane was definitely asking about why the group was looking at it so strangely just then.

When the four cultivators came out of the vortex, they were filled with a high level of vigilance. The bald crane rousing from its sleep might have attracted some of their

attention and shocked them with its words, but they were currently facing a matter that concerned their survival, and they did not have the pleasure of thinking about other things. Most of their attention was placed on remaining on guard.

They did not know whether Su Ming would keep to his promise, but when they saw him leaving into the distance with his group, the four of them let out sighs of relief in their hearts. Yet at the same time, once they exchanged glances, they saw the hesitation in one another's eyes.

One of the sentences Xu Hui had said had struck a chord in their hearts.

With their power, they did not have too much confidence in succeeding with their plan. In truth, they needed to rely on luck. However, if Su Ming and Xu Hui joined them, then the chances of them succeeding would be much higher.

This was a choice. On one side, they would suffer no loss, but the chances of them succeeding would not be great. On the other hand, while they would have to suffer some loss in terms of profit, the chances of them succeeding would be greater.

When they saw that Su Ming and the others had left into the distance, the four of them exchanged glances one more time, and three faces turned to Xuan Shang. After all, the leader of this operation was him, and it would be best that he made the choice.

Xuan Shang's expression changed several times. If Su Ming had forced them into an interrogation, then even if he had said it, he would have definitely searched for a chance to counterattack during their journey in the future. However, Su Ming did not force them. This caused Xuan Shang to fall into uncertainty before he quickly weighed the pros and cons. Then, he gritted his teeth with force, took a few steps forward, and wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming, who had already left into the distance.

"Senior, please wait, I am willing to tell you our secret in exchange for you joining our operation. If we work together, we will definitely succeed."

"Not interested," Su Ming said, his voice traveling behind him and echoing in the galaxy. The Void Beast beneath him did not stop and went farther away.

"This concerns the activation of the fifth kiln!" Xuan Shang immediately said.

1. Lower Realm, Higher Realm, Expanse Cosmos: Taken from Renegade Immortal and ISSTH.

Chapter 965 The Fifth Kiln

The most important things to Su Ming in Divine Essence Star Ocean were all related to the Fifth True World, and if he wanted to go to there, he needed the fifth stone!

However, this fifth stone was incredibly rare. All everyone knew was that it was produced in the fifth kiln, but not who had it.

However, there was no regular pattern in the activation of the fifth kiln. Sometimes it would activate after a few decades. At other times, it would take several centuries, and occasionally, several thousands of years. The longest recorded interval was twenty thousand years.

As one of the most mysterious places in Divine Essence Star Ocean, no one except the people who went into the fifth kiln before knew what was inside, and even if someone managed to return alive, they would naturally not tell the others much about it. The information they obtained would become the greatest secrets of their race, so that it would be easier for the members of their race to head into the fifth kiln when it appeared again.

The fifth kiln's location had always been a secret. Unless someone searched through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean with the flames as their guide when it was activated, then the people who wanted to find it could only look to the east of their cultivation planet. There, they would see the strange sun, which was the fifth kiln.

Yet if they were to look for it, then even if they walked to the ends of the universe, they would find that they were still unable to reach the fifth kiln. This was like a mirage. A person could see it, could stretch their hand towards it, but what they would obtain in exchange would be just ripples. They would be unable to take anything.

Su Ming was not putting on airs when Xuan Shang invited him the first time. He was truly not interested in it. There were countless wastelands in Divine Essence Star Ocean, as well as countless places where Gods fell asleep. It could be said that there was a possibility that any of these places could contain a serendipity and treasures that would cause people to fight over them.

He could search for these serendipities alone if he wanted, not taking other people. However, Su Ming's main focus was not on those serendipities. He wanted to go according to his plan and take revenge on the other three venerated races while waiting for the activation of the fifth kiln.

If it would happen, it would be good, but if he could not wait for long enough, then he could only return to True Morning Dao World with regrets in his heart.

That was why... the instant Xuan Shang's second sentence landed in Su Ming's ears, his eyes flew open. He raised his right hand and patted the Void Beast, which instantly stopped.

When Xuan Shang saw the Void Beast stopping, he knew that the fifth kiln had brought about the expected effect.

Su Ming stood up, and when he turned his head around, he looked at Xuan Shang and his group in the distance. He lifted his foot and took a step forward. At the instant his foot landed, he had already moved through space and appeared in front of Xuan Shang.

"Continue," he said faintly.

Xuan Shang remained silent for a moment before saying decisively, "I am a True Guard from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence! Or rather, there have been generations of members from the Xuan Family who have served as True Guards. We trace back to ten thousand something years ago. At that time, my ancestor coincidentally found a plate.

"It was a strange, with an everlasting flame on it. Generations of my family researched the plate and found that... the flames on it weren't normal flames, but they were never able to figure out just what type of flames they were.

"You saw the color of the flames back then. This sort of flame will not extinguish for nearly ten thousand years, and it is stored in the plate. No one knows how it appeared or how it came to be, but no matter where it is, as long as we swing that plate, the flames will immediately appear and burn everything...

"Seven thousand years ago, a Progenitor from the Xuan Family used some unknown method to ascertain the plate's identity in an auction held in Black Ink Planet. It showed up to be a relic left behind by the previous tribe leader of Dust Burners!

"Before the auction in Black Ink Planet ended, the Progenitor went through... a monstrous sea of fire that appears once the fifth kiln is activated. The sea of fire might not have swept up Black Ink Planet, but he could see it on Black Ink Planet. That indescribable flame and the dark color of the flame... was the fire on the plate!" Xuan Shang said calmly.

"Is the fifth kiln connected to Dust Burners?" A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes as he looked at Xuan Shang.

"They are definitely connected!" Xuan Shang nodded. "That is why, over the years, the True Guards from Xuan Family would secretly search for the path leading to Dust Burners. We spent several thousands of years, and we finally found an incomplete map. On it are some clues regarding the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. There are also some marks about Dust Burners," Xuan Shang explained while looking at Su Ming.

"As one of the four venerated races, Dust Burners have a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death among them. On... what basis are you going there?" Su Ming asked flatly.

"Based on the first Progenitor of Xuan Family being friends with a person in True Sacred Yin World in the past. That person gifted my family's Progenitor with a supreme treasure. Even a Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death will not be able to see any clues when this supreme treasure provides us with a cover.

"The meaning behind this treasure is greater than its effect. With this treasure around, Xuan Family can exist eternally in True Sacred Yin World, and no one will easily dare to snatch this treasure. More importantly, besides the treasure being connected to the blood of the Xuan Family, the person who gave us this treasure... is the current Sublime Paragon of True Sacred Yin World!" Once Xuan Shang finished saying these words, his eyes bore into Su Ming.

"We are also heading there based on our confidence with fellow Daoist Hua's Soul Sealing Art, fellow Daoist Yun's Aura Devouring and Transformation Art, as well as fellow Daoist Nian's Great Annual Wheel Dharma Art, which is an Art passed down through generations of their family. It is a pity that three more of our friends died, or else with the seven of us together and the supreme treasure running through our bodies, we could have all turned into one." Xuan Shang sighed.

A brilliant sparkle shone in Su Ming's eyes. He smiled.

"You're intending to disguise yourselves as a Dust Burner and blend among them, right? And you should be thinking about using the status of a lost son of the previous Dust Burner's tribe leader. If I'm not wrong, your family's Progenitor did not just obtain a plate in the past. He also obtained... a corpse!" Su Ming's voice was calm, but once he said it, a huge storm stirred up in Xuan Shang's heart, even though his expression remained the same.

He cast a deep look at Su Ming. This was the first time he met someone like him, who could discover the truth based on the few clues in his words.

It was just as Su Ming said. His family's Progenitor had discovered a corpse in the past, but it was not the whole corpse, only half of it!

"Based on this, that supreme treasure of your family can not only hide your presences, but also transform them. Only then would no one be able to see through anything in your plan," Su Ming said calmly.

Xuan Shang smiled wryly, then wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming. He might not have said it out loud, but the two of them already knew what was going on. As for the three cultivators by the side, there was now wariness in their eyes when they looked at Su Ming.

They were not just wary of his level of cultivation and his great power. They were also wary of how meticulous he was in his thoughts.

"I would not dare to hide from you, I had indeed thought of this. This was also what the members of the Xuan Family have concluded. This is the only way that we would be able to blend into the Dust Burners. After all... the Xuan Family does not have a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

"That is why we contacted our other old acquaintances in the other true worlds and gathered a total of seven people. Three thousand years ago, we stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and we have been preparing for this for a long time. Once we perfected our coordination, we entered the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"But it's a pity. On our way here, we ran into danger that we could not avoid, and three of our friends died." Xuan Shang's expression filled with grief as he spoke slowly.

"But since we ran into you, senior, it means that we have gained a greater chance in success. With you around, we will definitely be able to come into contact with the fifth kiln's secret. In fact, there is even a possibility that we will enter the fifth kiln!" A hint of resolve and hope appeared in Xuan Shang's eyes.

Su Ming stared at Xuan Shang. He could tell that this person was telling him partial truths, and there were things he did not say. This was understandable. After all, if he told everyone everything, then he would not have survived till now. It would also have been impossible for him to get to the later stage of World Plane Realm.

"How are you dividing the spoils?" Su Ming asked faintly. He was throwing this question out with the intention to test waters and learn just what sort of treasures were in the fifth kiln. After all, besides the fifth stone, Su Ming did not know the details of what else was in there. However, based on the resolve he saw on these four, it was clearly that they had a certain item that they were determined to get no matter what.

"Senior, do you have anything that you absolutely intend to obtain?" Xuan Shang immediately asked, avoiding Su Ming's question. Clearly, he did not want to say what they wanted.

Su Ming smiled and did not continue with his question. Instead, he answered firmly and decisively. "I only want the fifth stone!"

Xuan Shang immediately nodded. The other three people beside him also let out sighs of relief. They might not have had much dealings with Su Ming, but their instincts told them that he was not a person who would go back on his promises. As for the fifth stone, even though they also wanted to obtain it, compared to their true goal, this item could be ignored.

"Then..." A faint smile appeared on Xuan Shang's face. He quelled the excitement in his heart. He knew that the chances of success in this operation would soon become

greater. Just as he was about to say something, Xu Hui suddenly chuckled lightly beside Su Ming.

"I want a rouge jade."

When she said this, Xuan Shang and his group's expressions immediately changed slightly.

"Hmm? Could it be that me joining you is not valuable, even with my level of cultivation?" Xu Hui asked with a smile.

Xuan Shang smiled wryly. He looked at Nian Yin, who remained silent for some time before gritting his teeth and nodding. The rouge jade was one of the two objects that he wanted in the fifth kiln.

"Your Grandpa Crane too! I want crystals! Loads and loads of crystals!" When the bald crane saw that Su Ming and Xu Hui had obtained benefits out of this, its spirits were immediately lifted and it shouted loudly.

Once it finished speaking, to make itself seem more convincing, it swayed its body and turned into Su Ming. Then it moved again. Judging by its actions, it looked like it wanted to transform into Xu Hui as well, but when she looked towards it with a grin, and the bald crane's heart let out a loud thump against its chest. It then forced itself to stop after it had transformed halfway. The bald crane then quickly turned into Xuan Shang, then Yun You, Hua Yu, and Nian Yin's appearances. It even took the form of a Heaven Traverser after that.

"How is it? Heh heh, if I join you, I should be worth several hundreds of millions of crystals, right?" In the end, the bald crane looked at the flabbergasted quartet with a smug look.

"All the crystals in the fifth kiln will belong to you!" Excitement appeared on Xuan Shang's face. The bald crane's transformations perfected the final step of his plan of blending into the Dust Burners.

Chapter 966 Main Soul

The core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean was quiet. From the distance, the place looked empty, but there was dazzling light spilling out in all directions, filling the place with an unequalled beauty.

Rarely would cultivators come here, or rather, there were very few cultivators who could manage to come to this place. Even for Su Ming and Xu Hui, if they did not have Ninth Tribe's map, it would have been very difficult to arrive here.

As for Xuan Shang and his group, they had also only reached this region after going through plenty of hardships. They had prepared for this for thousands of years, yet they had still been reduced to the current four from their initial seven.

"Based on the incomplete map I have with me, if we move forward for a month, we will reach Dust Burners' territory. That's why we should make some preparations here." Xuan Shang looked at Su Ming.

"Xuan Family's supreme treasure can contain several people within it, and it can change its external appearance at will. With the Paragon Crane's transformations, there will not be a single flaw in our presence and external appearance."

As Xuan Shang spoke, he raised his right hand, placed his finger in his mouth, and bit down on it. Immediately, blood seeped out, and Xuan Shang formed a seal with his right hand. After a moment, he pushed his hand forward. The blood on his fingertip started changing rapidly, and in the blink of an eye, it turned gold.

The now gold blood flew out and shone with a golden light in front of the group, then swiftly expanded to the size of a fist.

"My fellow Daoists and two seniors, please offer up your fresh blood so that my family's supreme treasure can remember your presence. With it, it will accommodate all of you in it. There is no danger in this, and while I might not dare to call myself an honest and forthright person, I am definitely not a despicable person either, so you don't have to worry," Xuan Shang said in a low voice.

Nian Yin was the first to bite his fingertip and fling out his blood. It charged at the gold blood and came into contact with it, fusing with it in the blink of an eye. Immediately, the black blood looked as if it was boiling and swelled up again. This time, it swelled up to the size of a head. It was still gold inside, and it could be clearly seen that a faint golden light had appeared around Nian Yin's body, as if there was some form of connection between him and the ball of blood.

It was the same for Xuan Shang.

Yun You hesitated for a moment before he gritted his teeth and bit his fingertip. Then, he too offered up his blood. After a moment, the golden blood became bigger once more, and the golden light also appeared around Yun You.

Hua Yu was the last among the four to offer up his blood. His blood was different from the others. There was a hint of blue within red, making it seem as if it was nearly purple. When his blood fused into the golden ball, it immediately started tumbling about furiously. Once it swelled up to the size of an average man's height, it stopped growing.

"Seniors, please!" Xuan Shang looked towards Su Ming and Xu Hui.

"I'll do it first."

Xu Hui smiled. Right before Su Ming, she swung her hand, and the blood from her fingertip fused into the golden ball. She was already in Lunar Kalpa Realm, so the moment her blood touched the golden ball of blood, it started to boil with an unprecedented intensity.

This scene caused Xuan Shang and his group to focus their attention on the ball, but they were not too surprised by it. Clearly, the levels of cultivation from the people offering their blood would determine the size of the ball of blood.

The golden ball swelled up rapidly. In the blink of an eye, it grew to become one hundred something feet tall from its previous height of an average man. It floated in front of the group with golden light shining from it, causing all the people beside Su Ming to look as if they were wearing a golden cloak.

Xu Hui closed her eyes. After a moment, when she opened them, she looked towards Su Ming. "This is a form of acknowledgment. Once your blood fuses with it, you will obtain the supreme treasure's protection. There is no problem with it."

Su Ming stared at the ball of blood which had now grown to one hundred something feet. After remaining silent for some time, he bit his fingertip and offered up his own blood. This was the blood of his cultivation base clone, but that blood contained the presences of his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole and his Ecang Clone. His blood might have seemed incredibly normal, but the instant it appeared, the golden ball that was one hundred something feet started shuddering fiercely.

It was not doing so due to excitement. All the people in the area could sense that it was shuddering from fear. This stunned Xuan Shang and the other four.

Su Ming swung his blood forward and had it rush into the golden ball. The golden ball immediately moved back, but as if it was sentient and attracted to it, Su Ming's blood increased its speed, and before the group could react, it touched the golden ball.

A shrill scream of pain tumbled out of Xuan Shang's lips, and Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu followed suit. Even Xu Hui's face instantly turned pale, and pain appeared on her face.

At that instant, they felt a powerful impact coming from their souls. This was a form of decentralization from the golden ball of blood once it sensed danger.

Xuan Shang's face turned pale, and he immediately asked in a piercing voice, "Senior, what are you doing?!"

Su Ming frowned. He not done anything, only delivered his blood. He did not think that the golden ball of blood would react this way. The moment his blood fused into the golden ball, a powerful rejection came from inside it.

This form of rejection was due to the golden ball of blood trying its hardest to push out Su Ming's blood, but as if there was an incredibly powerful devouring ability within Su Ming's blood, the more the golden ball of blood rejected it, the more it seeped into the core.

"I didn't do anything. This supreme treasure of yours refuses to have my blood fuse into it," Su Ming said faintly. He could sense something from it. This was connected to his inborn ability as an Abyss Builder, so even a drop of his blood contained a powerful Possessive power.

Also, this was probably connected to his Ecang clone as well. After all, if even a Sublime Paragon of True Sacred Yin World might not be able to be on par with Ecang in terms of status as a lifeform, then it would be even more so for an Enchanted Treasure he created.

Xuan Shang's expression changed continuously. His family had used this supreme treasure many times, but they had never run into something like this before. He gritted his teeth. From what he could sense from the treasure, he could tell that what Su Ming said was true. It was indeed the supreme treasure rejecting him, and in a very powerful manner.

"Damn it..." Xuan Shang immediately used a unique Mind Art to control the supreme treasure so that it would not reject Su Ming but would absorb his blood.

Even a supreme treasure was still an Enchanted Treasure. As long as they were treasures, then even if they possessed spirits, they would still have masters. That was why Xuan Family's supreme treasure gradually stopped rejecting Su Ming's blood and fiercely fighting against the Possessive power contained in it, but allowed them to fuse together.

When they did so, a powerful roar erupted in Xuan Shang's ears and echoed in Xu Hui's heart. The golden ball of blood expanded at that moment. In the blink of an eye, it turned several thousands of feet all, and its color... changed from gold to black!

The dark shade was similar to the galaxy's color, as if they could fuse together and disappear. Xuan Shang's face was pale, and there was disbelief as well as incomprehension on his face. The Xuan Family had used this supreme treasure many times, but this was the first time its color had been changed to a shade of black.

For some unknown reason, at the instant he looked over, a sinister feeling that spread with no end entered his heart. It was the exact same feeling he got when he saw Su Ming the first time.

Compared to the other 's stupefaction and astonishment, Xuan Shang's heart let out a loud thump. After all, this was Xuan Family's Enchanted Treasure, so his understanding towards this treasure was incredibly deep, and he knew clearly that the color of the blood would determine who would own the ball of blood after it accommodated them. He was originally confident that even if it was Su Ming and Xu Hui, they would assimilate with the supreme treasure. They might not be controlled by him, but they could only provide power, and the core person who would determine how the supreme treasure would transform would be him.

However, the moment the golden blood turned black, even though he could still sense the connection of blood between him and the treasure, he had a feeling as if his own belongings had decided to listen to another person's commands.

In anguish, his gaze when he looked towards Su Ming contained an even deeper wariness and fear compared to the past.

Su Ming looked at the black ball of blood, then after a period of silence, he smiled.

"Me too!"

When the bald crane saw the other people doing things, it immediately shouted loudly to prevent them from casting it aside and making it lose its chance to obtain crystals. It was illusory body, but no one except Su Ming knew about this. Without even batting an eyelid, the bald crane bit the tip of its wing, and blood flew out to fuse into the ball of blood before it disappeared without a trace.

It might have seemed like fusion, but all of this was fake.

There was a connection between the bald crane and Su Ming's souls, which was why even if it did not offer up its blood, the effect would still be the same.

"I think I understand the basic principles of this supreme treasure, but I will still need your help with it, fellow Daoist Xuan." Su Ming looked towards Xuan Shang.

Xuan Shang smiled wryly. This feeling of having his control snatched from his hands in the open caused him to be unable to find a way to resolve his frustrations even if he was feeling indignant.

"Please use your hands to touch the ball of blood. It will suck you in, and then the ball will transform." Xuan Shang put away his gloomy feelings. Since this was the road he'd chosen, he could only continue treading it.

Once he finished speaking, he became the first to walk next to the ball of blood. He pressed his right hand on it, and immediately fused into it. Then, Yun You, Hua Yu, and Nian Yin did the same. Xu Hui turned her head around to look at Su Ming, then with a gentle expression, she too fused into the ball of blood.

The last were the bald crane and Su Ming. As for the Abyss Dragon, Su Ming had already put it away. Su Ming also sent away the Void Beast to wait for his call.

When Su Ming fused into the black ball of blood, he sensed that his body was enveloped by liquid. A strange connection rose swiftly in his heart. He could sense Xuan Shang and his group's presences as well as that Xu Hui was right by his side. He could also sense that all of their power would gather together with just a single thought from him, and that power would be shown outside.

In fact, they only needed to communicate with divine thoughts for all of them to know what the others were thinking.

If Su Ming was to compare this black ball of blood to a single person's body, then at that moment, he and the others were six different souls within that one body.

Chapter 967 A Show

One body, six souls!

Not every soul could control this body. Even though they were all inside it, only one soul could control it. This soul was the main soul, while the other five acted as assistants.

Originally, the position of the main soul belonged to Xuan Shang due to his natural advantage, but due to the transformation brought by Su Ming's blood, the main soul became Su Ming.

If a normal person had six souls in his body, then when the main soul controlled the body, the other five would be in deep sleep. Yet now, the black blood which they had entered was formed by a supreme treasure. Because of it, even if Su Ming acted as the main soul, the other five were awake. They could see and sense everything around him. Besides being unable to control the body, they didn't suffer in any other way.

Xuan Shang might have lost his ability to control the supreme treasure, but he was not too worried about being under someone else's control. Forget the fact that he was not Su Ming's opponent with his level of cultivation, if Su Ming wanted to kill them, he had plenty of methods to do so.

Besides, he was not worried that Su Ming would harbor covetous thoughts for this supreme treasure either. In True Sacred Yin World, there were too many people who lusted after this treasure, but no one dared to fight for it. This was a treasure that belonged to their Sublime Paragon. Without sufficient power, touching it would mean causing trouble to themselves.

Besides, even if he was unable to control this supreme treasure now, this treasure still belonged to the Xuan Family, and it was connected to them by blood. Because of it, as long as he wanted to, he could make the supreme treasure instantly dissolve, causing the people to immediately separate from each other.

Due to all this, Xuan Shang felt at ease. When he sent his divine thought to Su Ming, he also formed a picture in everyone's heads.

"Senior, please think of this picture in your heart. My fellow Daoists, we have to join in as well. Let us fall into a trance with this picture in mind. Do not be distracted and don't add in other things as you wish. By doing so, the ball of blood will turn into the shape I just sent you." Xuan Shang's voice echoed in the people's hearts, and soon a person's image appeared in their heads.

It was a thin middle-aged man. He was fair, and his hair was a flaming shade of red, while his pupils were blue. At the center of his brows was a ring-shaped mark formed by nine balls of flame.

He was dressed in a long hide robe. His face was pale, and there were nine blue lines on his right arm. They were branded deep into his flesh, and they flickered as if there were flames contained within them.

On his chest was a huge gash. That wound had already rotated slightly, which was a telling sign that he had been injured badly and unable to heal himself.

"This is a Dust Burner we formed based on the body of the Dust Burners' previous tribe leader as well as the near ten thousand years of understanding we have on them. We set this person's identity as a descendant of Dust Burners' previous tribe leader. When he was born, his father died. He drifted about with the relics from his father while searching for him. At one point, he was injured badly and swept into a Relocation Vortex. When he came here, he fell unconscious."

"The wound is too fake." Su Ming sent his thoughts to the others. "There are also far too many coincidences with him being Relocated here."

"Senior, what do you mean?" Xuan Shang immediately sent his thoughts over.

"He should have your map in his hands and have come to this place based on it. His injuries should not be on his chest, but on his entire body. All of you, imitate the wounds you see based on my imagination."

As Su Ming spoke, his divine thought changed, and the injuries on the middle-aged man's chest immediately healed in their heads. There was a faint scar there; however, his whole body now wore countless wounds that were healing. They seemed to have been left behind by claws that had ripped through his skin.

Aside from these, there were also endless small dots on his body. They were small holes that could not close up and heal, and everyone could imagine that the ones who had caused them had been thin and long worms.

There was also a long scar on the man's face. The appearance of that scar not only made the person look slightly more ferocious, but also made him exude a thick, ancient air.

"This person cannot be unconscious. He has to be awake to find his people," Su Ming said faintly.

"If that is the case, we will have many things that we will have to take into account." Xuan Shang hesitated for a moment. He knew that having the person they were about to change into fall into a state of unconsciousness was also slightly inappropriate, but if he was not unconscious, then they might reveal themselves right from the start.

"I will control him," Su Ming said calmly.

Xuan Shang thought about it for a moment before he gritted his teeth and chose to agree. Gradually, as the same image appeared in the others' head, the black ball of blood standing thousands of feet tall in the galaxy boiled, tumbled about, and shrank swiftly.

The bald crane's Transformation Art fused together with supreme treasure's transformation. They complemented each other, causing the transformation to be even more perfect.

As the black blood shrank, the silhouette of a person was gradually formed. After the around the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, what appeared in the galaxy was no longer black blood... but a middle-aged man covered in wounds and a scar on his face. His expression exuded an ancient air.

There were nine balls of flames that formed a ring at the center of the man's brows, while nine blue lines on his right arm looked as if they contained flames. He stood in the galaxy with his eyes closed.

Several breaths later, his eyes flew open. His blue eyes were originally blank, but they soon gained a sparkle of intelligence and perplexity.

He looked like a wanderer who had lost his home and was no longer able to find his way back. That perplexity was not shown obviously but was hidden deep in his heart. He stood quietly in the galaxy and looked at his surroundings silently, as if he could find a hint of familiarity in all the unfamiliar sights around him.

After a long while, he dipped his head down and looked at his body, at the countless wounds on it. Some of them were healing, and some were not. The claws marks were

left behind by Waves of Tears, while the small holes were left behind by some creatures he fought against that were incredibly difficult to deal with on his way to the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

There were plenty of other wounds on his body as well. Some of them were external, and some were internal. However, the wounds that covered his body did not seem important to him. The fatigue in his heart was born from the insistence to search for his people despite crying silently because he had no parents, no family, and no kin since young. This emotion had accompanied him for his whole life, turning into fatigue deep in his heart, and it would never melt away.

"Home..." Su Ming mumbled softly, as if he was truly an orphan of Dust Burners who finally found his homeland after going through far too many things. There was not just perplexity in his gaze, but also hesitation... along with an incredibly powerful grudge.

It was as if he was resenting the universe's injustice and his people for forgetting him.

At that moment, the other five souls in his body turned dead silent... They could sense Su Ming's current state and the transformations that occurred on the body under his control. The more it went on, the more shocked they became.

"It's too alike!"

"This-this feeling, it's precisely this feeling we want!"

"It was the most correct decision to let you control this body, senior! If it was me, it would have been difficult for me to execute it so perfectly!"

Xuan Shang was incredibly excited as he watched Su Ming control the body and sensed the emotions on it. It was difficult to imagine how anyone who had never gone through this personally would be able to bring out this authentic feeling.

Su Ming watched the galaxy in the distance, and the perplexity in his eyes slowly disappeared. The hesitation in his heart was also forced down. As a hint of resentment appeared in his eyes, he took a step forward.

He was so quick that in the blink of an eye, he had already went extremely far. A blue sea of fire spread from the nine blue lines. As they surrounded his body, they also went under his feet, causing him to become so quick that he disappeared without a trace.

Su Ming maintained this high speed. He was not the sole person providing the energy necessary for it, since it was split by all six people. Because of that, Su Ming could sense that even the offensive power erupting from this body had become incredibly shocking as the six of them were combined together.

It could bring forth power... that surpassed Solar Kalpa Realm. In fact, this body was already infinitesimally close to becoming a Master of Fate, and this was before Su Ming even fused his Ecang clone, or else he could make this body possess power that surpassed what Su Ming could bring forth at his strongest, even if it would still be unable to obtain power equivalent to a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. Yet... he could certainly make Masters of Fate who had yet to master fate frown and think that it would be incredibly difficult to fight against that body.

Su Ming was so quick that he surpassed his original speed by a lot. This was the speed the body had obtained after the six of them had fused together. And it was not a normal fusion, but summation!

The terrifying aspect of this summation was the important feature in the supreme treasure that allowed the Xuan Family to become successful.

Su Ming's speed instantly reached a state where he was moving at a speed equivalent to shifting. In fact, as he moved forward, for the first time ever he didn't notify the Duke of Crimson Flame before shifting. All he needed to do it himself was to think about it.

This outburst of speed surpassed Xuan Shang and the other people's expectations. The trip that was previously estimated to require one month would now only need half a month based on the speed at which they were traveling.

Time trickled by, and days went by. As Su Ming moved forward at his extreme speed, he looked like a shooting star in the galaxy. As loud bangs shot up in the air, he sliced through endless ripples. In the blink of an eye, half a month was over.

On the sixteenth day, an endless amount of fog that filled the entire area appeared before him. The fog might have seemed as such at first glance, but if anyone took a closer look, they would find that it was a sea of fire in the form of fog!

Before the body even closed in, a wave of hot air that could burn a person into a crisp came crashing into their faces, but Su Ming did not stop moving. He charged towards the fog with resentment hidden in his eyes, as well as murderous aura.

Looking like that, he took a step forward. He was so quick that in the blink of an eye, he turned into a long arc that charged into the distance.

Xuan Shang and the others immediately sensed the murderous aura. After being momentarily stunned, they immediately sent their thoughts to Su Ming. Only Xu Hui looked as if she was absorbed in her own thoughts.

"Senior, quick, put away that murderous aura of yours. This is..."

"What does he want to do?"

"Noisy!"

Su Ming's divine thought echoed calmly in the body. Not only did he not stop, but he became even faster. With a bang, he rushed into the fog that was a sea of fire. At the instant he stepped there, he felt the space around him distort. This was the dimension itself distorting under the extreme heat.

"Dust Burners, come out!" Su Ming threw his head back and roared when he was in the fog. In that roar was resentment, readiness to risk everything, desolation, and an ancient air.

Chapter 968 Dust Burners

Besides Xu Hui remaining calm, the four cultivators' expressions changed. They were feeling rather anxious and were unable to tell what Su Ming was thinking.

In truth, this was a manifestation of an insider being too concerned with someone else's matter, or else they would not feel so perturbed with their intelligence.

Xuan Shang hesitated for a moment before laughing wryly. It was impossible for him to deactivate the supreme treasure at this moment without everything coming to naught. As he sighed, he calmed his heart and mulled over Su Ming's actions. Gradually, a hint of understanding appeared on his face.

The other three also forced themselves to calm down in this state where they could do nothing. As they pondered over it, they came up with a few reasons for to Su Ming's behavior.

He was mixing the truth with falsehood!

They were intending to pass themselves as the real son of the tribe leader, but under Su Ming's control, this deception got infinitesimally close to the truth. In fact, it would soon no longer be a falsehood mixed in truth, but be turned into the truth from a lie by him!

This was the true epitome of passing off a deception as the truth... without causing chaos!

In the sea of fire that had turned into fog, Su Ming controlled the body as he charged forward. Mixed in with the sadness and anger on his face, there were a lot more complicated emotions. As he roared in a hoarse voice, it seemed as if he was venting his frustrations.

"Dust Burners, get out here!"

Su Ming's words were deep and sonorous. It spread out and reverberated in the fog brought by the sea of fire before going in all directions and lingering for a long time without disappearing.

As time trickled by, Su Ming controlled the body to travel even faster through the fog. His grudge-filled roars continued echoing in space, but the Dust Burners had yet to appear.

However, the fog created by the sea of fire around him seemed to be guided forward as he charged ahead, a form of friction seemed to be created due to that. This friction caused the fog around Su Ming to become hotter. Eventually, blue flames rose with a bang from the fog.

Those flames were initially just sparks, but in an instant, they grew larger and surrounded the area around the body Su Ming controlled. Then, they turned into thick, furious flames. They were formed from the fog, but the fog also came from them, making it seem that the distortion of the dimension was the flames' limit.

At that moment, the fog returned once again into a sea of fire, and with an incredibly high temperature as well as a presence that could burn everything, it charged towards Su Ming from all directions with a loud bang.

The sea of fire submerged his body in the blink of an eye, but the instant it did so, Su Ming let out a cold chuckle.

"You are just mortal fire and your only function is to guard the entrance to the Dust Burners' territory. How dare you come and block my path?!"

Su Ming controlled the body so it raised its right hand to swing its arm forward. Immediately, blue light rose from the nine blue lines of fire. Two of them shone, and as they waved about in the air, the booming sounds in the area surged into heaven. The sea of fire that filled the area and charged towards Su Ming rushed into his right arm. In the blink of an eye, all of it was absorbed by the blue lines.

Almost at the instant Su Ming did so, a cold and sinister snort came from the fog and echoed through the area. Along with the voice came a figure that charged towards him from the distance.

Su Ming's footsteps came to a halt. When he looked over coldly, he saw a young man. There was pride on his face, and there were six marks of flames at the center of his brows. He was dressed in a fire-red long robe. As he strode forward, he instantly appeared in front of Su Ming.

At the instant he looked towards him, his expression changed, and the sound of his snort died off. In fact, he even took a few steps backwards on instinct. With an

expression of disbelief, he stared at Su Ming, at the face of the body he controlled, and the nine marks of flames on him.

The more he looked at them, the more familiar became the appearance of the body that Su Ming controlled, especially the nine marks of flames at the center of his brows. It instantly caused him to remember something.

The young man's expression changed drastically, and he cried out in surprise, "Tribe... Tribe leader!"

The body Su Ming controlled was formed based on the corpse Xuan Family obtained in the past. However, some changes had been made, making it appear younger, and it only looked similar to the corpse instead of being identical to him. After all, they were forging a father-son relationship, not imitating the tribe leader himself.

However, to increase the persuasiveness of the similarity between this 'father-son' pair, the body had gone through a lot of modifications, which was why a person who saw it at first glance would have the feeling as if they were looking at the old tribe leader.

The young man had never seen the previous tribe leader in person before, which was why he had not immediately recognized him. However, due to the annual ceremony to worship their ancestors, the portraits of the forty something generations of tribe leaders they worshipped since he was young were etched into his memory, and one of the old tribe leaders looked just like the person he saw right then.

The nine marks of flames between the brows of the body Su Ming controlled acted as the key to guide the young man's thoughts.

Yet soon, once he cried out in surprise, this young man noticed that something was wrong. This person only looked similar to the person in the portrait, but he was not that person. Because of it, when he connected the stories regarding the previous tribe leader to the status of the person in front of him, the answer to his identity arrived at the tip of his tongue!

"Know who I am now?"

Resentment appeared in the eyes of the body Su Ming controlled. He took a step forward, raised his right hand, and seized the air in the direction of the young man.

Shock had already filled the young man's heart. At that moment, he could not bring himself to give raise to any will to fight. As he retreated, he lifted his right hand, placed it by his mouth, and quickly blew a whistle.

The whistle echoed with piercing tone in space. At the instant it spread out, the fog around the area started tumbling. A ball of flame manifested and charged towards the

center of the young man's brows. It spun once there and turned into a firebird before rushing out towards the depths of the fog at an incredibly fast speed.

Once he finished doing all this, the young man retreated once more.

Su Ming cast a glance at the firebird. With his power, he could make it stop, but that firebird was clearly used to pass a message. A glint appeared in his eyes. He felt that there was something off about this. After a moment of contemplative silence, he went to chase after the young man.

When the young man retreated, his expression was one of incredible nervousness. Once he saw that Su Ming was chasing after him, he muttered a curse, and fog instantly rose around him. It turned into an image of flames in front of him and charged behind him.

Su Ming did not say a single word. He did not even spare a single glance at the incoming image of fire and just rushed forward, crashing straight through it. As a loud bang reverberated, a deafening sound of something shattering spread through space. The fire image shuddered, and Su Ming went straight through it. He raised his right hand and quickly seized the air in the direction of the young man.

With it, the fog around him looked as if it was ordered around and turned into a gigantic fire hand to grab its prey.

The young man's expression changed. When he saw that the hand was about to catch up to him, he gritted his teeth with vicious intensity, wrapped his arms around his chest, bent his body, and curled himself into a ball. Once he did so, he stretched his limbs outwards, and the six marks of flames at the center of his brows started flashing intensely, looking as if they were melting each other. Moments after, they formed a single, huge mark of flames.

At the same time, a thick wave of fierce, crimson flames spread out from that mark. In the blink of an eye, it filled the young man's body. As it burned, it changed, and from a human, the young man turned into a flame giant of several dozens of feet.

His clothes could not be seen, and neither could his appearance. The only thing Su Ming saw was a giant formed by flames. There was an incredibly large mark of flames at the center of his brows. He threw his head back and roared, then ran towards the palm from Su Ming rushing over to him.

Booming sounds instantly echoed in space. At that instant, Su Ming's eyes focused. He could tell that this Transformation Art was an inborn ability among Dust Burners. It was the same as Heaven Traversers possessing wings. Dust Burners had been able to become one of the four venerated races and exist at the edge of Divine Essence Star Ocean's core because they had this inborn ability to transform.

The young man had originally been only in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, but when he transformed, his level of cultivation instantly increased exponentially and reached the later stage of World Plane Realm.

Yet even so, before Su Ming, he was still... so weak that he could not withstand even a single blow!

If it was not because he wanted to observe the Dust Burners, he could have killed him instantly.

Su Ming's eyes flashed, and he changed the direction of his right hand. Instead of seizing the young man, it turned to slap him. The two crashed into each other. Booming sounds echoed in the air, and the young man let out a shrill scream of pain. As he coughed up fresh blood, his body was sent flying backwards by the slap from the giant flame hand Su Ming had formed in space.

When the transformation due to his innate ability fell apart, the flames scattered, and the young man returned to his original appearance. His face was pale, and he coughed up blood again. Without even having time to wipe away the blood at the corners of his mouth, he used the force of the strike to help him retreat.

Su Ming chased after him. Yet at that moment, the expression of the young man fleeing in the distance relaxed. Dozens of whistles came from within the fog, and it was a sign that a dozen something long arcs were closing in on the area.

Su Ming stopped moving and looked coldly at the source of that sound. Immediately, he saw a dozen something Dust Burners within the long arcs. Most of them were middle-aged men, with only the person in the lead being an ancient old man.

Their expressions were incredibly solemn, and there was disbelief and deep doubt contained within them. When they arrived, the old man took hold of the injured young man. Once he saw his wounds, he frowned. When he raised his head, he looked towards the body Su Ming controlled.

When he saw him, his expression changed drastically. Shock appeared on the faces of those behind him.

"You are..." The old man stared at the face of the body Su Ming controlled. That face was incredibly familiar to him, and what especially gained his attention were the nine marks of flames at the center of the body's brows.

All of these caused the old man's expression to become complicated.

"Well, who do you think I am?!"

In the face of the old man's query, Su Ming threw his head back and laughed. There was enmity in that laughter, along with forlornness, as well as an ancient and anguished air that seemed as if it had been accumulated throughout thousands of years.

The old man fell silent, but in the blink an eye, a hint of resolution appeared in his eyes.

"Seize him!" Once he said these words, the dozen something people behind him stopped moving for a while, as if they were hesitant.

"Seize him!" the old man shouted out again. The dozen something people behind him then gritted their teeth and flew out together to charge towards Su Ming.

Chapter 969 Change into a Burning Spiri

"Don't threaten his life," the old man said with complicated emotions.

The dozen something people charged forward. When they closed in on Su Ming, his shrill laughter echoed in space. With great anger and sadness, he raised his right hand and threw a punch towards the dozen something people before him. With it, he executed the most powerful force he could bring out in this body - the offensive power of those in Solar Kalpa Realm.

Loud booms sounds surged into the sky. As it grew so loud that it was deafening to the ears, the dozen something people's bodies stopped altogether. In fact, even the old man's pupils shrank. The power that erupted from Su Ming's body caused him to be apprehensive!

"So this is my people!" Su Ming spoke with a bark of laughter filled with anger and sadness. However, the anguish in his laughter was an emotion that only those who had lived through his experiences could sense. "This is the people I never forgot and insisted on searching while living a life of trials and hardships, going through dangers that almost cost me my life!" Su Ming raised his right hand and threw a punch forward again.

"I did not come here today for you Dust Burners. I will take the things my father left here, and with just you... you will not be able to stop me!"

Su Ming took a step forward and threw a punch again. The full power of Solar Kalpa Realm erupted from his body at that moment. Booming sounds reverberated in the air, and by himself, he forced the dozen something Dust Burners to continuously retreat.

Su Ming's punches did not land on anyone's bod, but struck the area in front of them. Because of that, it formed a powerful impact. It swept up the dozen something people, preventing them from getting close to him. They could only move back continuously.

The old man's expression changed. His pupils shrank, and a strange light appeared in his eyes as he stared at the body Su Ming controlled.

'The previous tribe leader left this place ten thousand years ago. This child's appearance is practically the same as his, and he has the presence of us, Dust Burners. There is no possibility that we could be wrong in this.

'I might not know with what woman and from what race the previous tribe leader had this child, but the nine marks of the flames at the center of his brows clearly show the purity of his blood.

'He does indeed belong to the main bloodline of Dust Burners... If we judge based on this, then he should only be some thousands of years old, but with just thousands of years... he has already reached this Realm. His potential... Even if he doesn't have the main bloodline, he would still become a presence that surpasses all of the others in our tribe.

'It's a pity... If Progenitor could egress, then we might still be able to change things.' As the old man shook his head, he fell into contemplative silence. Suddenly, his eyes shone, as if he had come to some sort of decision, and he spoke swiftly.

"All of you, turn into the Burning Spirit!"

As the old man spoke, the dozen something Dust Burners stopped and wrapped themselves into a ball together. The marks of the flames at the center of their brows fused together, and suddenly, booming sounds reverberated in space. The dozen something people turned into a dozen something large flame giants in the blink of an eye, and as they roared, they charged towards the stranger.

Su Ming saw the old man's expression change, and a thought formed in his heart. He did not believe that this had not caught the attention of Dust Burners' Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, not when this happened right at the tribes doorstep. However, that person had still not appeared. There had to be a reason behind it.

Su Ming had a few ideas why that might be so.

There was a large floating continent at the core of the fog. That continent was not too large, but it was big enough for a hundred thousand something Dust Burners to live for countless years.

This was where the Dust Burners' tribe was stationed.

There was a desert on the continent, and not a single plant could be seen there. Hot air filled the entire area, and there were hot gusts of wind occasionally blowing through the place. There were towers on the ground. Their heights were different, but even the

shortest tower was thousand something feet tall. As for the tall ones, they were several hundreds of thousands of feet tall.

If a person cast their gaze across the land, they would find that there were hundreds of thousands of these towers around. They were scattered all over the place, and there were flames burning around them. The most important ones were located at the top of the towers. As for those around the buildings themselves, they were formed by the sea of fire spilling down from the top like flowing streams of water.

The flames at the tops of the towers did not seem too strange at first sight, but if anyone looked carefully, they would find that each of them formed eyes.

Because of it, the continent gave off a feeling that it had hundreds of thousands of eyes that seemed to be looking at all the secrets in the universe for all eternity.

At that moment, at the top of the tallest tower, which stood at one hundred thousand something feet tall, was a middle-aged man sitting under the eye of the flame. His face was blackish red, and his expression gave off an awe-inspiring air. There were nine marks of flames at the center of his brows.

He watched the gigantic eye in front of him, not doing anything.

Standing beside him were nine old men. None of them were speaking at that moment. They only looked at the eye of the flame.

Within it was the image of Su Ming fighting against the dozen something Dust Burners in the fog beyond the continent.

After a long while, the middle-aged man asked faintly while remaining seated, "Has Progenitor shown signs of egression?"

"There's no signs whatsoever," one of the old men behind him answered in a low voice.

"No signs, hmm...? Then it means that the old man has already egressed." The middle-aged man smiled faintly, but there was a dark and sinister aura to it. This was due to the presence of the body Su Ming controlled in the eye of the flame.

"This person is not old, but he has already reached this Realm. It's clear that he has run into plenty of dangers and difficulties in the years he has wandered outside..." the middle-aged man said softly. "I have never showed any care towards him over the years as his uncle. I feel slightly ashamed to face my older brother." The middle-aged man sighed softly.

"Oh well, just kill him. The nine of you, go personally. Use the fastest speed you can muster to wipe out all his traces. I feel incredibly uncomfortable just looking at the nine marks of flames at the center of his brows."

The middle-aged man's voice remained calm. The nine old men by his side hesitated for a moment before lowering their heads and voicing their obedience. In the span of a breath, all nine of them disappeared without a trace.

"How can the old man not feel tempted by the presence of such a prodigy...? But why have you still not said anything...? Could it be that there is something wrong with this person...? Oh well, I'll help you solve this," the middle-aged man mumbled and closed his eyes.

In the endless expanse above the fog formed by the sea of fire was a spot far away from the battlefield. It was quiet there, and even the rumbles from the fight could not reach this place.

In the fog was a blurry figure sitting cross-legged. He was not tall and appeared very thin and small, having the appearance of a boy. He was currently staring at the area beneath him, as if his gaze could penetrate all the fog and see Su Ming on the battlefield.

The blurry figure shook its head and said to softly to itself, "There's nothing wrong with his presence. There's nothing wrong with the mark of his flame... The feeling of his blood is also correct... and his expression seems incredibly real as well, but why do I constantly sense an unfamiliar presence about him?"

'When Ze Rong and his brother had a falling out in the past, it was a pity that I had something to attend to outside. When I returned, he had already left the tribe. I predicted that he would run into a disaster that would cause his death, and it was of a kind that could not be resolved, which was why I did not chase after him and search for him. The tribe then obtained a new tribe leader.

'But in my predictions, Ze Rong did not have children...' The eyes of the blurry figure sparkled, and a piercingly cold look appeared within them, but there was still hesitation within them.

"Whether or not you are a Dust Burner and Ze Rong's descendant... will depend on whether you have awakened our people's inborn ability, Burning Spirit. If you can transform into a Burning Spirit, then I will appear and recognize you as well as let you return to us. If you can't... then I'd like to see just who is scheming against us Dust Burners!" The blurry figure laughed coldly and no longer spoke.

Booming sounds surged into the heavens from the battlefield and reverberated in space. In the face of the dozen something Dust Burners who had turned into Burning Spirits, which were the flame giants, Su Ming kept going forward and did not stop. Even if these people's level of cultivation increased exponentially once they transformed, the highest among them was just in Lunar Kalpa Realm. Compared to his current body, which could bring forth the power of Solar Kalpa Realm, the difference was too great.

And this was before Su Ming even activated the power of his Ecang clone. If he did, then he could let this body fight against an Almighty who had reached Mastery Realm, just like Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. If Su Ming had been in possession of this body created by the supreme treasure at that time, then he was confident that he could have engaged Heaven Traversers' Progenitor in an intense fight, and even made him frown.

The anger and sadness on Su Ming's face did not falter. With a cold harrumph and a step forward, he threw three consecutive punches.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three punches landed in space and stirred up a powerful impact that turned into loud bangs that traveled in all directions, causing the dozen something Dust Burners who had turned into Burning Spirits to look as if they were being blown by violent gusts of wind. They immediately fell back, and with a single move, Su Ming rushed out of their encirclement.

Yet at the moment he rushed out, a sense of danger rose in Su Ming's mind. Xuan Shang, Hua Yu, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Xu Hui's hearts felt it as well.

"Careful! Powerful warriors are coming!"

"It's not just one, there are nine of them!"

The group's voices all reached Su Ming. At the same time, the expression of the old man who had appeared the earliest changed.

Nine powerful vortices appeared in the space around Su Ming. Then, nine people walked out from them. They were nine old men, and they... were nine Almighties in Solar Kalpa Realm!

Their appearance immediately caused the fog that was the sea of fire to surge like waves, and loud bangs rang out. As the fog fell backwards, a hot wave that could burn everything erupted from the bodies of the nine people.

At the same time, a piercing light spread out. It came from the nine suns behind the newcomers!

Once the nine people appeared, killing intent radiated off their faces. A solemn look appeared on Su Ming's face, but he did not forget to throw his head back and laugh. Its sound betrayed that Su Ming intended to bid farewell to the world, but it also contained intense anger.

This fitted his status. It also caused conflict to appear on the face of the old man who had appeared the earliest, then it turned into resolve.

'The previous tribe leader did a favor to me in the past... and I have never been able to repay him. Today, his son came here. Why should I hesitate any longer?!' The old man gritted his teeth. He did not attack, but instead immediately sent word to Su Ming.

"Young tribe leader, hurry up and transform into a Burning Spirit! With your current level of cultivation, you must have definitely awakened your inborn ability! Transform into a Burning Spirit, then all will be resolved!"

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. When he saw Dust Burners transforming, he had already recorded the process in his head. He had also seen some clues regarding that transformation. Once the old man spoke, Su Ming took a few swift steps back. He was already certain in his heart that the reason why Dust Burners' Progenitor had not appeared was because he had not transformed into a Burning Spirit. This was definitely because he was uncertain of Su Ming's status.

'Transform into a Burning Spirit!'

The moment Su Ming sent this thought to the bald crane, he also sent it to Xuan Shang and the others. He prepared himself to curl into a ball, but then a thought appeared in his heart. He gave up on that action and instead stood there and executed the transformation into a Burning Spirit in a completely different manner!

As he did so, he began activating Ecang's presence in his soul and dispersing it.

Chapter 970 Dust Burners' Progenitor

Su Ming had decided to disperse Ecang's presence because his so-called Burning Spirit Transformation was fake. For him, it was just an external transformation, but the other Dust Burners' level of cultivation would increase exponentially once they turned into Burning Spirits.

Since that was the case, then if Su Ming transformed and retained his current level of cultivation, everyone would be able to tell with one glance that he was a fake.

Once he fused with Ecang's presence, his power would increase, because of that, the body he controlled would also have its power increase by leaps and bounds. The quick rise in power and presence would be almost the same as when a Dust Burner transformed into a Burning Spirit.

Once Su Ming sent his divine thought outwards, Xuan Shang and the others immediately focused. The image of Dust Burners transforming appeared in their heads. The bald crane also used every ounce of its strength while yelling for crystals in its heart to transform with Xuan Family's supreme treasure while Su Ming acted as its main soul.

Su Ming did not know what form he should take as the son of the tribe leader and a Dust Burner who had nine marks of flames. Thus, he could only act according to his own judgment.

As he transformed, the marks of flames at the center of his brows fused together and his body was enveloped by a sea of fire. With a bang, flames that were the exact same as the ones the Burning Spirits had let out appeared distinctly in the fog.

Su Ming intentionally made the transformation slow. His eyes were hidden in the flames, and as he transformed, he observed the changes in expressions of the people around him, especially the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm and the old man who had previously given him a reminder. These ten were the ones Su Ming prioritized in his observations.

As he watched them, he noticed that when he began transforming, the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm stopped and did not attack anymore. Instead, they focused their attention on him, but when they noticed that he was changing into the same form as the other Dust Burners, seven of them appeared as calm as they did before, but there were two who looked as if they were sighing in relief.

This scene caused Su Ming to focus. When he looked towards the old man who had given him the reminder just then, he saw a hint of disappointment in the old man's expression.

Su Ming thought quickly. At the instant his body was about to complete the transformation, he lifted his right foot, stomped on the galaxy, and let out a low growl.

Blue flames swiftly appeared with a bang from the marks of flames that had fused together into one at the center of his brows. The blue flames were formed from the blue lines on the right arm of the body Su Ming controlled. When they appeared, they instantly enveloped his body, causing the flame giant that was Su Ming to turn into a blue flame giant.

When he brought forth this transformation, Su Ming's eyes, which were still hidden in the flames, did not show a single hint of inattentiveness. Instead, with bright, sparkling eyes, he saw the expressions of the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm change at once. In fact, a hint of nervousness as well as shock appeared on their faces.

The disappointed look on the old man who had reminded him earlier turned into excitement in the blink of an eye.

When Su Ming saw this, he no longer hesitated. He might still have been a little uncertain, but there was no longer time for him to think too much about this. With gritted his teeth, he finished his transformation in the blink of an eye.

What appeared before the people was a flame giant several hundreds of feet tall. The flames on its body were azure blue. While surrounded by other Dust Burners, Su Ming's flames became the most brilliant flames in this galaxy.

If it was just his body that had transformed, it would not have been enough to shock these people. Yet right then, power erupted from Su Ming's body. While it might still be power equivalent to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, it was a presence that was much stronger than that of a normal cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm. It gave rise to a loud bang and formed a mighty pressure that forced the nine old men to retreat as their expressions changed.

And this was just Su Ming fusing Ecang's presence into his body and not him truly having his Ecang clone descend into this place. If that happened, he could fight against an Almighty in Mastery Realm with the supreme treasure around!

With the bald crane around, the supreme treasure formed a perfect layer of protection, preventing the presence of Su Ming's Ecang clone from spreading outwards. Because of it, his transformation had no flaws.

Almost at the instant the body Su Ming controlled turned into a blue flame giant, the eyes of the middle-aged man sitting and meditating at the top of the one hundred thousand feet tower in the Dust Burners' continent located in the depths of the fog flew open. He stared at the eye of the flame in front of him, and as his expression changed, he stood up.

"He reached Blue Flame Transformation?!"

At the same time, the blurry figure who seemed like a boy in the area above the fog curled his lips into a faint smile. At the instant he saw the body Su Ming controlled turn into a blue flame giant, all his doubts were dispelled. In truth, even if this person had just turned into a normal crimson flame giant, he would not have suspected him anymore. He would have been just slightly disappointed.

After all, crimson flames were something all of them could do once they awakened, but the level of difficulty for blue flames... was far greater. This required a second awakening, and it had nothing to do with level of cultivation. The key to it was in the blood.

"With just a few thousand years, he reached Solar Kalpa Realm, and his blood reached Blue Flame Transformation... Ze Rong, you delivered a great gift to our race!" The blurry figure stood up with a bark of laughter, then took a step downwards, towards the battlefield.

'This child has reached Solar Kalpa Realm, but a sun formed by his cultivation base did not manifest. This can only mean that he has not truly reached Solar Kalpa Realm, but attained it due to some sort of serendipity.

'If that's the case, then it explains why he obtained such offensive power within thousands of years. Not bad, not bad at all!'

The blurry figure was indeed a boy. He had a head full of white hair but appeared only to be about seven or eight years old. He strode forward with a smile, and the expression of praise as well as joy spread through his face.

On the battlefield, once Su Ming transformed, he looked at the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm whose expressions had changed by then. At that moment, everything around him was in dead silence. The Dust Burners' gazes when they looked at Su Ming were no longer the same as before. There was respect contained in their eyes, along with zealousness.

Su Ming looked towards the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm and asked in a ghastly voice, "Do the nine of you want to kill me?" A vast, mighty presence spread out as he spoke, sweeping up the fog around him while his voice echoed in the area in loud booms.

The nine people's expressions changed, and anguish appeared in their hearts. They knew that there were plenty of rules in the tribe, and one of them was that those who had more marks of flames were to be regarded with respect. These nine old men had only eight marks of flames, and when they attacked just then, they could be seen as going against the rules of their tribe. However, this person had not been considered a member of their race moments ago, so it did not bring about too much of an effect.

Yet at that moment, once he transformed, revealing Blue Flame Transformation, they knew that there was absolutely no need for anyone to verify his identity to make sure that he was a Dust Burner. When they added this fact to the one that he possessed nine marks of flames, a mighty pressure greater than his power was formed.

Even the tribe leader did not have the right to kill one of their own who possessed nine marks of flames and the Blue Flame Transformation.

As the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm hesitated, a long string of laughter broke the silence. The fog tumbled backwards as the laughter echoed in space, and a blurry figure walked out of thin air. With one step forward, his body gained corporeal form, and eventually, a boy with white hair walked out.

The boy's appearance immediately caused the expressions of the nine old men in Solar Kalpa Realm to change. Without any hesitation, they knelt down and worshiped him.

"Greetings, Progenitor!"

The Dust Burners around the area and the old man who had given Su Ming a reminder also knelt down together to worship him with zealousness and reverence.

Su Ming's pupils contracted as he stared at the boy walking towards him. He could sense the mighty pressure spreading out from the person's body incredibly clearly. This was... a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

The feeling that the other's entire body was filled with supreme power allowed Su Ming to know that this person had already perfected Mastery Realm. His power was almost the exact same as that of the one he had met in the territory where the four Great True Worlds were stationed.

"What is your name?" A smile appeared on the boy's face when he looked at Su Ming.

"Mo," Su Ming replied faintly.

At that moment, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu immediately became nervous in the body he controlled. Su Ming's answer was not the name they had set previously, but Su Ming had been the one taking the lead all this while. During the course of their journey here, the decisions he made brought about a crucial effect, so his choices were clearly much better than they original plan, which was why even though they were nervous, they did not send out any thoughts to him.

"Oh? Why did you name yourself this way?" A light crease appeared between the boy's brows. This was not a Dust Burners' name.

"Because ever since I can remember myself, I had an important person in the place where I lived. His family name was Mo," Su Ming replied calmly. There was a hint of obstinacy in his voice.

"Who is your father?" the boy asked again.

Su Ming stared at the boy in front of him coldly and did not speak.

The boy was also staring at him, but as he observed Su Ming, he heaved a sigh in his heart. He could see the resentment, anger, and sadness in this person's heart, and there was no longer any need for an answer as to why those emotions were in him. When this child was born, his father should have died soon after, and he was brought up by a person whose family name was Mo. He must have been able to come to this place because Ze Rong had entrusted him with an authentication token and some pointers to this place before he died and left him an orphan.

"I don't have a father." Su Ming let out a cold snort.

"What are you saying?!" the boy shouted out. There was a hint of solemnness in his voice as he continued speaking, "Your father's name is Ze Rong. He is the previous tribe leader of Dust Burners. I watched him grow up into an adult, and you are a Dust Burner as well as the young tribe leader of our people!"

"Oh well, I will tell you about your father later. Now... child, you are home!" The boy looked at Su Ming, and a kindly expression appeared on his face.

"I am not a Dust Burner, I came here to take that Ze Rong's belongings. Since you Dust Burners could cast my father and me aside for thousands of years, I..." The obstinacy in Su Ming's voice became even stronger, but before he could even finish speaking, the boy swung his arm forward, and all the fog in the area let out a loud bang before swiftly turning into a gigantic hand. That hand occupied most of the galaxy. It was made of fog, and no end to it could be seen.

Once it appeared, it swiftly clenched into a fist. What it grasped was not just Su Ming, but all the Dust Burners in the area. Booming sounds reverberated in the air. Su Ming could fight against it, but he did not attack.

If anyone looked at the fog in Dust Burners' territory from the distance, they would find that they could see a hand formed by fog dissipating the moment it clenched into a fist. The fog spread out once more then, but all the Dust Burners present moments ago had disappeared.

Chapter 971 I Want to Go to the Fifth True World

In the depths of the fog was the continent where Dust Burners lived. On it was a tower several thousands of feet tall, and hovering over it was a ball of flames resembling an eye. In that eye was Su Ming, and he was sitting cross-legged in there without moving.

There was an endless sea of fire around him, making it seem as if he was in another world.

Beyond the eye of the flame where he sat was Dust Burners' Progenitor, who was sitting cross-legged.

It was the ninth day since Su Ming was brought back to Dust Burners' continent from the battlefield of fog.

"How very impervious to reason. You are just like your father in the past. I've told you plenty of times that when your father and your uncle had a falling out and left in the past, I was outside and could not rush back. As for you... I told your father's fortune years ago, and in that prediction, I saw that he would never have children in his life.

"That is why I never had anyone venture out to search for you.

"But I'll admit that there are times when predictions do not end up true. This was caused by your father meeting someone who changed his fate when he was outside, that is why your existence was not part of my predictions, and it is also why your power reached

this state within just thousands of years and even awakened to blue flames," the boy said with a frown while staring at Su Ming sitting in the flames.

He had detained him for nine days. Since the first day, the man did not acknowledge Dust Burners and did not want to become a part of their people. On the ninth day, it was still the same. In fact, he no longer spoke and was fighting back with silence.

This vexed Dust Burners' Progenitor. If it had been any other member of his race, he would have killed them with a smack and not have bothered wasting his breath on them. Even if they were members of his race, he would not have paid any attention to them if they only had normal potential. Since they did not want to become Dust Burners, then they might as well get lost and live on their own in the world outside.

Yet he was incredibly happy with this Mo before his eyes. He was already this powerful at such a young age and had awakened to the blue flames. Even Ze Rong and his brother could not do this at his age. In fact, in Progenitor's eyes, if he educated this child well, there was a high possibility that a second Master of Fate, Lives, and Death would appear in the tribe.

At that time, if he didn't begin failing in health, they could bring about a time of glory for Dust Burners and fight against Reng Wu Race.

"Son, I can understand your resentment and will make up for the lack of concern from your people in the past. But you've already returned to the tribe, and I've already made an announcement that you are the young tribe leader!

"While you're here, no one will be able to harm you. Even your uncle, who is the current tribe leader, won't be able to do it!

"As soon as you form your own Solar Kalpa instead of reaching that Realm with your offensive power, I will immediately invalidate the current tribe leader and make you the new tribe leader. By doing so... you can also make your father rest in peace...

"Besides, I can guide you in your training. I already look forward to you becoming a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death and making Dust Burners return to their former glory." The Progenitor who looked like a child continued advising Su Ming earnestly and patiently with good intentions.

Su Ming sat in the flames with obstinacy on his face, but Xuan Shang and his group were in a state of excitement and were itching to make Su Ming immediately agree to it, but he was the leader and had even helped them obtain success that they would not have been able to obtain with their own plan. Because of that, they did not dare to advise him though and only watched helplessly as he sat without saying a single word.

After several days of silence, Su Ming opened his eyes and asked, "How can you make me a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death?"

Dust Burners' Progenitor immediately smiled. As long as Su Ming spoke, it was fine. The thing he worried about the most was him having made up his mind to not speak again. But since he spoke, everything could be settled through discussion.

"Even if you don't become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, when my health starts failing, I will turn all the epiphany I have gained into the tenth flame and fuse it into your body so that you can become an Almighty in Mastery Realm. However, that will cause your level of cultivation to come to a halt, and you will never be able to gain an epiphany of Fate Realm." Dust Burners' Progenitor looked at Su Ming and smiled with kindness.

When Su Ming saw that smile, he fell silent, feeling rather complicated inside. That smile was real, and everything the other had done during the past nine days were also true.

He truly treated him as Ze Rong's child and a Dust Burner.

Su Ming had only seen this smile scant few times. The first to show it to him was his elder, next was his Master, and the third was Dust Burners' Progenitor.

"Mo, don't worry. I promise, I will make up for all the grievances you suffered over these years." Dust Burners' Progenitor looked at Su Ming, and his smile filled with even more kindness.

The praise on his face grew stronger as days went by, and as he communicated with Su Ming, he truly grew fond of the child before his eyes.

He was smart, but also loyal. Stubborn, but also impulsive. Thousands of years of loneliness might have made him slightly extreme, but it also gave him a trough of experience that other people could not obtain.

Dust Burners' Progenitor could see all of this.

The youth must have gone through plenty of trials and tribulations as well as countless life-and-death situations to be able to reach this state, obtain such power, and find where Dust Burners were located.

Dust Burners' Progenitor saw all the scars and wounds on the body Su Ming controlled. Some of them had already healed, but some were still closing up. Progenitor could even tell which beast left behind which marks on his body.

"Fate Realm is after Mastery Realm... so Life Realm is after Fate Realm?"

Su Ming raised his head and looked at Dust Burners' Progenitor. He did not have an in-depth understanding of Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death. Even Ecang had only a vague notion of it in its memories. Since it did not train in the path of cultivation, it had no details.

"Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, Rise and Fall of Fate, Reincarnation of Life, Death of the Universe, these are the four Great Realms..." Dust Burners' Progenitors said with a smile and explained in detail for Su Ming. He was very eager to explain this to make Su Ming excited and become hung up about this so that he would stay among Dust Burners.

"The people in the four Great Realms can all be known as Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, but in truth, that title signifies four Realms, and Mastery Realm is the limit of physical power!

"The second is Fate Realm. With the limit of power, you will control the fate of the things around you, and from it, you will come to understand your own fate. Once your fate fuses with the fate around you, you will gain completion and be able to control the rise and fall of fate.

"The third is Reincarnation of Life. This is a Realm where it can be said that you have obtained eternal life, but there are simply far too few who have reached this state. I am not too certain on the details on how to get to that Realm either.

"The fourth is Death of the Universe. This is the final Realm for Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death." Progenitor's voice was ancient at this moment and gave off a feeling of time. It reverberated in the area, and there was a hint of yearning on his face.

"However, a stage of decline will exist for all within each realm. This is a disaster, but once we get through it, we will have a chance to reach a new Realm. Yet it is just a chance. If we don't manage to get through it... our forms and spirits will be destroyed." When he said these words, he sighed.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment, then a hint of resolve appeared on his face when he looked at Dust Burners' Progenitor. "What comes after the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death? Is there anything else after that?"

"There is!" Progenitor nodded.

"After the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death is the Sublime Realm! This is a Realm that I do not know the details of as well. Rumors have it that those in the Sublime Realm are known as Sublime Paragons and can replace an entire galaxy... However, these were Sublime Paragons of the ancient era. They have all perished in the Rho Leonis Disaster.

"As of now, there are four Great True Worlds beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean. There are Sublime Paragons in them... but there should not be anyone who has become a true Sublime Paragon. They are only Inferior Sublime Paragons," Dust Burners' Progenitor said calmly, but the impact brought to Su Ming by these words was incredibly great. It also caused Xuan Shang, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, Yun You, and Xu Hui's hearts to tremble as well while they were in the body Su Ming controlled.

They realized that when they were with Su Ming, they seemed to be able to learn some things that they would have otherwise remained oblivious to their entire lives, such as the three Great Ancient Kingdoms, the Resentful Weis, and the three hundred and sixty-one Expanse Cosmoses.

And just moments ago, they learned of the categorizations of Masters of Fate, Lives, and Realms, as well as rumors about Sublime Paragons.

"What is after that?!" The resolution on Su Ming's face grew greater.

"After that... is Avacaniya!" Dust Burners' Progenitor looked at Su Ming and shook his head. "Avacaniya is a Realm, and just like the meaning of the word avacaniya itself, unless you have reached this Realm, you are not allowed to speak of it, or else you will bring great disaster on yourself. That is... a Realm that has surpassed the imagination of all the living!"

Su Ming fell silent. This was the first time he had heard of such a circumstantial Realm. At that moment, he might have seemed calm, but a huge storm had already stirred in his heart. All the Realms were like ravines that were placed in front of him, but they stimulated the resolve in his heart. He longed for the day that he would cross these ravines and reach a Realm about which all the living could not speak of, or rather... did not speak of!

'Perhaps this is the true meaning of Avacaniya!' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"There are plenty of lives in the universe, and a long period of time has already passed. Countless races have risen and fallen. Some of them remain to this date, albeit as remnants. Some have been destroyed, their bloodlines having disappeared. Some have become greater...

"The way to make a race strong is to have powerful warriors, to find people who can take over the tasks of these powerful warriors, and whether there is anyone who can become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!

"Mo, you are a Dust Burner!" Dust Burners' Progenitor said sincerely and earnestly.

"... I am not." Su Ming felt slightly complicated in his heart as he looked at Dust Burners' Progenitor in front of him.

"You..." Progenitor who had the appearance of a child stared at Su Ming, and after a long while, he sighed. "Since you are not willing to become a Dust Burner, then why did you come here? I do not believe in the things you said about wanting to take the things your father left behind. Tell me, what is your goal?" Dust Burners' Progenitor asked while shaking his head.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before his gaze landed on Progenitor.

"I want to go to the Fifth True World." When Su Ming said these words, the boy's eyes suddenly focused.

Dust Burners' Progenitor cast a few scrutinizing glances at Su Ming before he asked calmly, "What is the reason?"

Su Ming met Progenitor's gaze and answered softly, "To return a debt of gratitude,"

Dust Burners' Progenitor fell silent. He did not ask for details, but instead stood up. Once he cast a profound look at Su Ming, he no longer spoke, but swung his arm and walked away. He then disappeared into space.

He left behind Su Ming who closed his eyes in the flames on the thousand feet tall tower.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 972 Master of the Kiln - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 972 Master of the Kiln

Chapter 972 Master of the Kiln

Xuan Shang and his clique had incredibly mixed feelings in their hearts. On one hand, they felt excited over the success they obtained after Su Ming changed their plan, but on the other hand, they were filled with surprise and a hint of uneasiness when Su Ming spoke about the Fifth True World to Dust Burners' Progenitor.

After all, this was where Dust Burners' tribe was located. Once their identity was exposed, it would be impossible for them to escape, and what would await them would be certain death.

While their hearts were filled with nervousness, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Huo Yu did not send thoughts to each other, but instead thought by themselves.

Xu Hui had always acknowledged Su Ming's decisions. Even at that moment, it was the same.

The bald crane was a simple-minded creature. No matter what Su Ming did, the main thing it would focus on would only be crystals.

Su Ming sat cross-legged in the fire with closed his eyes. His expression was calm, and not a hint of emotion could be seen on him. He did not want to deceive Dust Burners' Progenitor too much, even if he had harbored the desire to kill this race before he came here.

However, the kindly and amiable expression on Progenitor's face had turned into a sigh in the end in Su Ming's heart.

Humans were complicated creatures. They would be moved by certain things, and as their hearts were touched, their thoughts would also change. This was common sense.

Others would be affected in this manner, and it was the same for Su Ming.

If Dust Burners' Progenitor had been half-hearted towards him, then he would not have moved Su Ming's heart, but the more amiable he was to Su Ming and the more he looked at him with a kindly face, the more complicated Su Ming's emotions became.

He was not a Dust Burner. He also came to this place with a motive. With those thoughts in his head, Su Ming had replied that he was not when Dust Burners' Progenitor said he was a Dust Burner.

To Dust Burners' Progenitor, this was brought about by Su Ming's obstinance and resentment, but in truth, Su Ming was telling him the truth.

That was also why he had told the true reason why he came to this place. But clearly, it had been misunderstood by Progenitor as Su Ming making a request to him.

If he fulfilled this request, then he would choose to become a Dust Burner.

This misunderstanding came about not because Dust Burners' Progenitor did not have enough experience, and neither was it because he was dumb. Instead, it was because there was simply no flaw in Su Ming's transformation due to the supreme treasure, coupled with some changes the bald crane had made on some details.

There was not a single flaw in Su Ming's story, his expressions, his gaze, and all his words.

It could be said that if any one among the supreme treasure, the bald crane, and Su Ming was missing, they would have never reached this point.

Days went by with Su Ming continuing to sit in the flames and waiting.

When one month went by, Dust Burners' Progenitor appeared beside the one thousand feet tall tower, right beside the flames. There was a hint of fatigue on his face when he looked at Su Ming in the ball of flames.

Su Ming opened his eyes and saw the fatigue on him.

"Are you certain you want to go to the Fifth True World?" Dust Burners' Progenitor asked calmly.

Su Ming nodded.

"If you want to go to the Fifth True World, you will need the fifth stone to go to the fifth ocean. Over there, the fifth stone will be attracted by the Fifth True World in the void and with rush there at an extreme speed. You must remember to hold onto the stone tightly, for only then will it be able to lead you through time and space.

"When you go there, you must keep the fifth stone close to you at all times. It is the only way for you to come back." Dust Burners' Progenitor remained silent for a moment after that. He then swung his right arm in space, and two jade slips immediately charged towards Su Ming. They seeped into the flames and floated in front of him.

When Su Ming raised his hand to receive them, he scanned them with his Atman. His heart shuddered.

The first jade slip was divided into two parts. The first one was a detailed map of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean, with the fifth ocean clearly marked in there.

The second part was a gigantic outline. Three words were written on it - Fifth True World. This was a general map of the Fifth True World. Even if it was just a small part of it, it was enough to stun everyone.

After all, this was... the Fifth True World that had disappeared countless years ago!

There was only a small part in the second jade slip that was an unknown region. Besides it, the place was divided into nine layers, and each layer was incredibly detailed. In the ninth one, which was the deepest layer, was a flaming red region. There were three words marked on it - the fifth stone!

"The second jade slip is a map of the fifth kiln. If you want to go to the Fifth True World, you will need the fifth stone, and it is only produced by the fifth kiln." Dust Burners' Progenitor saw shock on Su Ming's face and explained the reason why he gave the second jade slip to him.

Su Ming fell silent, the shock in his heart becoming even greater. Besides the three maps, there was another reason why he was stunned. On the first jade slip, he had sensed... a bloody presence.

That bloody presence did not seem ancient... but was fresh.

"Progenitor, how... did you obtain this jade slip?" Su Ming hesitated for a moment before he looked at Dust Burners' Progenitor. When he once more saw the fatigue on his face, he gradually came to an understanding.

"It's nothing. I already had the map on the second jade slip, but the first part wasn't complete, and while I might know the way to the Fifth True World through the fifth

ocean, I've never went there myself. I didn't know how to come back either. Besides, if you truly reached the Fifth True World, you would need a map. That is why I went to the fifth ocean to search for a few old friends and got myself a map." He might have described it with a casual air, but Su Ming could hear the bloody slaughter behind his words.

During the last month, Dust Burners' Progenitor had to have stirred up a storm in the fifth ocean, and only after a great battle would he have managed to snatch the first jade slip. The fatigue on his face was the proof of that great battle.

This was an important map, especially the parts regarding to the Fifth True World. Those in possession of such a map were definitely not weaklings, or else it would not have taken Dust Burners' Progenitor a month to obtain it, and he would also not have returned this tired.

"By the way, if you truly obtain the fifth stone, then once you reached the fifth ocean, remember to make a copy of the map and throw the first jade slip into the ocean. At that time, someone will come get it, and once they get the jade slip, they will not make things hard for you," Dust Burners' Progenitor said calmly.

Su Ming fell silent. He could already imagine that there were alien races in the fifth ocean, and they would not let just anyone enter their home ground. Then the jade slip in his hands was an authentication token. One that could allow him to enter and exit the fifth ocean at will.

And him coming to possess this authentication token was related to Dust Burners' Progenitor venturing out this time.

It was certain that besides fighting against them, Dust Burners' Progenitor had also paid some kind of price.

"Oh, come now, don't act like a child. I admit that I have been unjust to your father in the past and didn't search for him, making him wander outside for so many years.

"I said that I will make up to you. Since you brought up the request to head to the Fifth True World, I naturally had to help you with all that I could. As for me, I'm fine." Dust Burners' Progenitor smiled kindly as he looked at Su Ming. His expression was that of a senior member of a family looking at a promising junior member of the family.

Su Ming stayed silent. He had incredibly mixed feelings in his heart, along with a hint of regret.

"Now, let's talk about the main point. The fifth kiln..." The Progenitor's expression became serious. "Very few people know where the fifth kiln is located in Divine Essence Star Ocean. However, most of the ancient existences still know about the connection between the fifth kiln and Dust Burners.

"The fifth kiln is the supreme treasure we Dust Burners protect," Progenitor explained while looking at Su Ming. "However, there is one thing that most people do not know. If you could come here, then you must certainly know about the four venerated races in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"Heaven Traversers have wings, Virtue Rooters have snake bodies, and Reng Wu Race... It is a group that is completely isolated from us. They live with ferocious beasts, and they have completely turned into them. In fact, I suspect that Reng Wu Race has evolved from a group of beasts.

"Only Dust Burners look somewhat normal, if you ignore our inborn ability to transform... Do you know the reason why?" Dust Burners' Progenitor looked at Su Ming with a smile.

Su Ming hesitated for a moment before he looked back. Suddenly, an inconceivable idea formed in his mind. Once it took root, it continued growing, until it occupied all of Su Ming's head.

His eyes focused.

"You came... from the Fifth True World, from inside the fifth kiln!" he only said these two sentences, but once they reached the child-looking Progenitor's ears, he laughed loudly. The praise on his face grew even stronger.

"As expected of a Dust Burner who possesses the greatest amount of potential since a long time ago. That's right, accurately speaking, we Dust Burners do not belong to Divine Essence Star Ocean. We... belong to the Fifth True World!

"In fact, we are not even a race within the Fifth True World, but are a race formed after the Vessel Spirit in the fifth kiln was dispersed!

"Our original appearance is how we appear after we transform with our inborn ability. However, once the fifth kiln reached Divine Essence Star Ocean and we obtained the forms we could manifest, we broke our previous master's seal. Since then, Dust Burners appeared in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean!

"It has been an incredibly long time since that time. I, too, only learned about this through the words passed down the generations. It's a pity that it has been a long time since then. When we were Vessel Spirits and had not left the fifth kiln, we did not know about much about the Fifth True World, or else I would not have needed to go to such trouble to search for a map," Dust Burners' Progenitor said faintly.

Su Ming might have guessed a part of it, but he was still incredibly shocked by Progenitor's words. In his shock, another vague guess formed in his head.

This guess made him unable to keep calm. In fact, he thought that this was even crazier and even more inconceivable than his previous deduction. It was highly impossible, but the guess still continued circling in his head, out of his control.

Su Ming forced down the guess in his heart and looked at Dust Burners' Progenitor before he asked, "Then... the master of the fifth kiln was...?"

The young boy raised his head and looked at the sky before he said softly, "Have you ever heard of a race... known as Abyss Builders...?"

A loud bang went off in Su Ming's head.

Chapter 973 Is He a Dust Burner?

The Fifth True World had disappeared many years ago. No one remembered any longer when it had happened, just that it was in an age long past.

Perhaps the amount of years Dust Burners had lived in Divine Essence Star Ocean could be used to calculate how many years the Fifth True World had been missing.

Then just how many years had it been since Progenitor Dao Chen from True Morning Dao World had isolated himself? In fact, how many years had it been since one man brought his pregnant wife to pass by True Morning Dao World and was chased by Morning Dao Sect?

The wife was injured gravely as she was about to give birth. With a smile, she died, and when the man held her in his arms, he had shouted a sentence in a shrill voice, "This world shall be built for Abyss."

How many years had it been since then?!

Su Ming's heart trembled. Various thoughts appeared in his mind, but were immediately sealed up by his power, preventing Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, and Yu Xuan from sensing anything.

'The time isn't right... They... should not have left the Fifth True World with the fifth kiln...' Su Ming mumbled in his heart, but there was uncertainty in his guess.

Because even he did not know... for just how long he had lived.

"You are still a child. You wouldn't know about Abyss Builders." Progenitor's words reached Su Ming's ears, and he forced down the hint of complicated emotions and melancholy in his heart.

He had long since been able ascertain that the man who had wreaked havoc in True Morning Dao World was his father, and the pregnant woman who was about to give birth was his mother. He had seen her in the depths of his memories when he was in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands. At that time, she had held him in her arms and insisted on protecting him even if she had already died.

However, he did not want to think about it, did not want to ponder over it, did not want to let himself sink into a vortex in which he could lose himself.

In regards to parents and familial love, perhaps it had once existed when the man looked at the woman with a smile, and she lowered her head to look at her large stomach. The hands that caressed it belonged both a man and a woman. There was anticipation contained within that touch, along with parental love, happiness, and warmth which Su Ming had never experienced in his life.

Perhaps it should be said that before that warmth could even get close to him, it had already reached the end of its existence without making a single sound. In the end, it was just a scene akin to mountains and rivers falling to eternal silence and the passage of time reaching its end. It was just the lonely snow.

Su Ming was lonely, just like the celestial beings in heaven. Time seeped through the cracks between his fingertips. His memories sank into the depths of his mind as he continued changing. His heart sought for a way to escape reality, and his dreams were laden with grief in the dark.

This was Su Ming's emotions towards his parents, and they were mixed with a hint of anguish that he did not want to dwell upon... along with a hint of resentment that suited his current identity!

What he resented was not his mother who held him after she died or his father who died after he went mad... but Morning Dao Sect who had brought about all of this!

That was why he Possessed Dao Kong. The simple destruction of Morning Dao Sect was not enough for him to vent his resentment and frustrations. He wanted to rain down chaos on the sect and become the sect's master. At that moment, he would smile and lead the entire Morning Dao Sect through a windstorm of self-destruction.

In fact, if he had children, he would not even choose to destroy Morning Dao Sect. Instead, he would turn the entire Morning Dao Sect... into a pen of livestock for the descendants of the Su Family to Possess for generations to come.

"Abyss Builders were the strongest race in the Fifth True World..." Progenitor's voice was slow, and Su Ming's mind, which currently had a storm raging within it, slowly returned to reality.

"The fifth kiln was created by Abyss Builders, and Dust Burners were in truth... created by Abyss Builders as well." There was a slightly complicated look on Progenitor's face as he told Su Ming the story that he knew.

"The fifth kiln had two masters. The first one was Abyss Builders' Progenitor, but he died during the disaster. The second master was his grandson, Su Xuan Yi . He was the second strongest person among Abyss Builders, next only to Abyss Builders' Progenitor.

"There was originally a third master. He was Su Xuan Yi's son... but this child never appeared, which is why the fifth kiln doesn't have a third master even up to this date."

When Su Ming heard this, he could no longer hide the emotions on his face. His body shuddered, and his expression changed continuously. When Dust Burners' Progenitor saw this, he did not speak of it, but continued his tale.

"During the disaster of the Fifth True World, Abyss Builders were exterminated. Only Su Xuan Yi managed to escape and bring his pregnant wife through an All Directions Seal which he opened with the fifth kiln. When he escaped from the Fifth True World, he appeared in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"They lived there for a long time and opened the fifth kiln so that Dust Burners could venture out. We regarded him as our master and lived for generations in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"He wanted to break the curse placed on the baby within his wife's body. That curse... had been placed by a Sublime Paragon, and it would result in Abyss Builders' bloodline going extinct.

"This curse killed the baby, but Su Xuan Yi used his power and desperately maintained a hint of life force within the baby. A long, long time later, they ventured out once... and never returned," Dust Burners' Progenitor finished softly, his voice echoing in space.

Su Ming was silent.

After a long while, he asked, "If they were such a powerful race, how did they disappear? And even the Fifth True World disappeared from the universe."

"This is a story that happened a long time ago. I am not aware of the details. After all, at that time, I was just a ball of fire in the kiln and did not have my own consciousness.

"However..." Dust Burners' Progenitor looked at Su Ming. "Once I gained my consciousness, I heard a few Progenitors of the past generations mention some of it. This matter... is related to Sublime Paragons... limits... numbers... and Ancient Wei."

Su Ming's pupils contracted. This was an incredibly great question at the bottom of his heart. Why was the Fifth True World destroyed by the four Great True Worlds working together? And Abyss Builders, why were they exterminated?

Originally, Su Ming believed that this was somehow related to Abyss Builders' inborn ability. However, when he heard Progenitor's words, he suddenly felt that his guesses were wrong.

Since this concerned Sublime Paragons, then there was definitely not just one or two of them. Instead, all of Sublime Paragons from the four Great True Worlds had caused this to happen.

Then just what reason could push these Sublime Paragons who had surpassed the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death to the point that they would want to exterminate Abyss Builders to the last person?

Numbers, limitations, Ancient Wei-these three words echoed in Su Ming's head, but he could not connect them together.

How great was the number and whose limit was it that made it necessary for them to destroy Abyss Builders? Why was it also connected to the already destroyed Ancient Wei?

"Alright, these are all the things regarding Dust Burners that you need to know. Now, I will take you to the fifth kiln. As for whether you can find the fifth stone in there will depend on whether you can encounter a serendipitous event.

"After the changes the fifth kiln went through in the past, plenty of things have transformed in it. The signs of manifestation of other Vessel Spirits have also appeared. There is a great amount of danger in there, but you are a Dust Burner. You have a natural advantage.

"But... once the kiln is activated, it'll be impossible for you to be the only one who will step in, because a sea of fire that will sweep through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean will appear. Due to that, some Almightyies in Divine Essence Star Ocean and cultivators from the galaxy beyond will rush over.

"Are you certain that you want to go to the fifth kiln?" Dust Burners' Progenitor looked over.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment, then nodded.

Dust Burners' Progenitor cast Su Ming a profound look. When he raised his right hand and swung it in the air, the flames around Su Ming immediately fell back, and Su Ming's body appeared in the air.

Immediately after, Dust Burners' Progenitor swung his arm again. The weather instantly changed. Winds rose and clouds surged, as if time and space had changed. It could be said that clouds were charging forward like flowing water in the sky. This scene made it seem as if the heavens and the land were being changed.

Su Ming obviously felt that he was not moving. In fact, even Dust Burners' Progenitor stood in his place without moving... but when everything about them stopped within a few breaths, Su Ming discovered that they... were no longer in Dust Burners' continent.

They were surrounded by an empty galaxy. Not a single sound could be heard in the dead silence. The only thing present there was a gigantic picture of a flame in front of them. The flame was so big that when other people saw it, the image could reflect in their entire pupil.

There was no end to the flame. It made no sound, and there were no hot waves crashing into Su Ming's face. In fact, he felt as if the gigantic flame was fake. It existed between a state of being real and fake.

Su Ming's pupils shrank. He was first shocked by the shift Dust Burners' Progenitor just executed. He had never seen that sort of shifting before. Clearly... this was a divine ability that only Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death possessed.

Dust Burners' Progenitor cast Su Ming a look and said faintly, as if he could see the thoughts in Su Ming's heart, "That was the Position Changing Art. If you reach Mastery Realm someday, you will be able to do it as well.

"This is where the fifth kiln that Dust Burners protect lays. It might seem close, but it is in truth very far away. Even if we fly for ten thousand years, we would not be able to get closer.

"There are two ways of going inside. One of them requires you to be the master of the fifth kiln, and the other... needs you to open it and make the outer flames spill out. By doing so, you will be able to enter the fifth kiln.

"You will need three days to activate the kiln. When the outer flames spread out through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean, you will bring about a disaster. You will need half a month. Use that half a month to prepare yourself. When the color of the outer flames changes to purple, you can enter the kiln.

"Remember this. It will first be crimson, then it will turn blue, and then purple. In the end, it will turn black. When it turns black, all the living beings in the sea of fire will die.

"Wait here. I will go back and activate the kiln." Dust Burners' Progenitor cast Su Ming a look again. When he turned around, his body gradually faded away.

Su Ming looked at the fifth kiln in the distance. As his pupils shrank, he fell silent and did not speak, but there were hundreds of thoughts spinning in his head as he carefully analyzed Progenitor's words and the several profound looks he cast at him.

Gradually, a brilliant light flashed in Su Ming's eyes.

At that moment, in the core of the fog where Dust Burners' continent was, Progenitor's body walked out of thin air on the one hundred thousand feet tall tower in the land.

There was a person sitting cross-legged on the tall tower. This person was middle-aged, and he was Dust Burners' tribe leader. Once he saw the child-looking Progenitor, he immediately stood up and bowed respectfully to him.

"Activate the kiln!" Dust Burners' Progenitor said flatly.

The middle-aged man was momentarily stunned. When he looked over the boy before him, he hesitated for a moment.

"Dust Burners can never return to the kiln. This is the law set by our ancestors. If... you value him so highly, I can give him the position of tribe leader. For if he returns to the kiln, he will immediately return to become a fire spirit. This is..."

"Is he a Dust Burner?"

Dust Burners' Progenitor was silent for a moment, then he sighed softly. The meaning behind his words was incredibly shocking, and it caused the middle-aged man's expression to change swiftly.

Su Ming and Su Xuan Yi: Both their family names are the same character, 苏. Yes, my mind is running wild with theories at this moment.

Chapter 974 Has... He Died

There was no way people who became Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death could be easily deceived. Even if not a single flaw could be found once the supreme treasure and the bald crane worked together and even if not a single mistake in Su Ming's not just similar but extremely alike acting!

Even if the power that erupted from him was also the exact same as the blue flames obtained in Burning Spirit Transformation.

However... if it could have deceived Dust Burners' Progenitor, then he would not have survived up till then. Progenitor... would also not be worthy of being known as a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

Old men who had lived this long and who had become Almighties all possessed monster-like intelligence.

The breathing of Dust Burners' tribe leader quickened slightly. He cast an eye and the child-looking Progenitor and could not keep his heart calm. He had... been deceived.

He had come to believe that Su Ming was his older brother's orphan son, yet with a single sentence from Progenitor, things turned over their heads.

"This is..." The middle-aged man could not say anything even after a long while had passed. "Progenitor, then why do you still want to help him activate the kiln and get close to it? For this person... you even spared no pains in having flames cover the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean once the kiln is activated, and are willing for Dust Burners to be sealed for nearly a month?"

Dust Burners' Progenitor was silent while standing at the top of the lofty tower. By his side was the eye of the flame. He looked at the sky, and after a long while, he sighed softly.

"I might not know who sent him here... but I admire his courage and resolve. I also admire him for telling the truth. There are only a few people in the world who would still tell the truth when they were in his situation," Dust Burners' Progenitor said softly.

"I can see the complicated emotions within him. Part of them is due to me showing him love as an elder, and the other is due to him lying to me. He did not choose to hide these complicated emotions. Even I was uncertain because of them for a moment, but they also caused my killing intent to dissipate. If not for all this, I would have killed him right away." Dust Burners' Progenitor shook his head, and an ancient look appeared on his face.

"I still don't understand..." A freezing glare appeared in the tribe leader's eyes. If it was him, he would have definitely not let Su Ming to just leave like that. How dare he disguise himself as a Dust Burner? This was a taboo!

"You don't understand, huh...?" Dust Burners' Progenitor averted his gaze from the sky and fixed his eyes on the middle-aged man. "Then there is no need for you to continue trying to understand it. Activate the kiln."

Dust Burners' Progenitor did not say anything anymore. The middle-aged man's mindset might have changed due to Su Ming's matter, but he still bowed his head and voiced his obedience. He took a step forward and stepped straight into the eye of the flame. He moved in the flames, and in an instant, he turned into a Burning Spirit.

Flames spread out with a bang. From the distance, it seemed as if the tall tower had turned into a gigantic torch!

A piercing roar spread out in all directions from the flames. All the Dust Burners who heard it were momentarily stunned, but they soon charged towards the tower that was the closest to them.

After a moment, flames spread out from the countless rising and falling towers on the entire continent. They formed torches on the land, and after the time it takes for two incense sticks to burn, all the towers turned into burning torches. A vast amount of power erupted from them with a bang.

A buzzing sound echoed throughout the area. The entire land of Dust Burners shuddered. Almost all Dust Burners had turned into Burning Spirits at that moment.

This lasted for three days. It was an offering. If someone wanted to activate the fifth kiln, then all Dust Burners had to make an offering to do it.

Three days later, all Dust Burners disappeared from the ground. The fog in the area enveloped the whole place. At that moment, a surging sea of fire erupted from the fifth kiln and swept through Divine Essence Star Ocean, forcing countless living beings into hiding as they trembled for their lives. If they were exposed outside, they would definitely die.

This would last for nearly a month. When it ended, Dust Burners would reappear in the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

When all Dust Burners who were qualified to make the offering blended into the fire and transformed into burning torches on the ground, Progenitor swayed and disappeared from the tower. When he reappeared, he was at the top of a tall mountain. Over there, he sat down quietly and looked at the sky. Fatigue and something ancient appeared on his face.

'Why should I help him...?' Dust Burners' Progenitor shook his head.

'That's because I didn't want to bring a huge problem to Dust Burners... Because the method he chose was within the area I could accept. Because... he let me feel as if I had found a truly talented Dust Burner for the past few days.

'He has a treasure that can turn him into a Dust Burner. It's definitely not something a normal Master of Fate, Lives, and Death could create. If he could reach this level of cultivation, then the power of the person supporting him behind his back is even higher.

'The time for my decline is nigh. The person who can take over my place has already obtained enough power, but to take over the burden of an entire race does not just require power... but also the making of a choice.

'Oh well, if he wants to go to the Fifth True World, why should I stop him and bring unnecessary trouble to my people... However, while I can activate the kiln for you... whether or not you will have the ability to step in will depend entirely on your own luck.'

Dust Burners' Progenitor lowered his head. Everything that he had said to Su Ming was true. The purple flames in the kiln were indeed the weakest flames... but their heat was next to the black flames' heat. Under that high temperature, all those who wanted to get close to the kiln and step in would not only need a sufficient level of cultivation, but also a serendipitous event.

"If he was truly a Dust Burner, how great... would that be?" Dust Burners' Progenitor mumbled under his breath. As his figure was illuminated by the endless torches on the ground, he was surrounded by an ancient and lonely air, along with worry about his race's future because he felt as if he had no successor.

This was an old man who had already reached the end of his path. He did not want to bring about trouble to his race. If he could pass through this possible disaster and have everything change without a sound, then it would be the best choice.

.....

Su Ming sat in the area where the fifth kiln was located and watched the piercingly bright kiln. He could not see the kiln's appearance, only a ball of strong light.

He could also sense a vast and might pressure within that light.

The fifth kiln was akin to a sun, making people unable to help themselves as respect formed in their hearts, but Su Ming felt no respect as he remained in his silence. There were only complicated emotion within him.

'In the past, he came to this place with the kiln... and he brought with him his wife and the cursed baby.' Su Ming stared at the kiln, and resolve suddenly appeared in his eyes.

'Has he truly died, or is he?' Uncertainty appeared on Su Ming's face. After a long while, he sighed. He did not want to continue thinking about this.

If Su Xuan Yi had truly died, then he would let it slide, but if that person was still around... Su Ming could not help the great resentment that rose in him. The emotion was so great that it caused him to clench his fists.

"Senior... what... happened just now?" Xuan Shang's voice echoed in Su Ming's heart, and it cut off the surging emotions that had risen due to his thoughts about Su Xuan Yi.

"We didn't manage to hear anything from the moment Dust Burners' Progenitor returned to to talk to you. Some form of power cut off our connection with you as well as the body," Xu Hui said softly.

Su Ming's pupils shrank swiftly.

"That's right, senior. What did Dust Burners' Progenitor say to you? And this place... this... this is..."

"Could... Could this place be the fifth kiln?!"

"We actually arrived here?!"

Su Ming's connection with Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yi, Hua Yu, and Xu Hui had clearly been restored just then, and only at that moment could they sense the body too. They immediately noticed the fifth kiln, which was shining with a bright light.

As Su Ming's pupils shrank, he frowned. After a long while, he sighed. If he still did not understand what had happened, then he would not be worthy of having lived through years of hard experiences.

"He knows that I am not a Dust Burner. The words he said previously were also aimed solely at me. He did not want anyone else to hear them." A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes before he fell into contemplative silence.

After a moment, he stopped caring about Xuan Shang and the others in his group. He only sent a divine thought to Xu Hui to ease her mind before he charging into the distance. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared from the area around the fifth kiln.

.....

On the first day of the kiln being activated, wind rose in the galaxy within the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. This was an incredibly rare thing. There was no wind within the galaxy, so when this wind rose and blew in all directions, the bodies of all living creatures who sensed it shuddered. No matter what they were doing, be it fighting, searching for food, or sleeping, all of them revealed expressions of extreme terror.

In the planet serving as a nest for Flame Fiends, the creatures who had gained human form after they occupied the bodies of cultivators were sleeping, but at that moment, all of them were shocked awake. They looked at the sky and sensed the wind from the galaxy as well as a hint of scorching flames. Immediately, they screamed shrilly.

There were many Void Beasts in the galaxy, but when the wind blew past them, all of them quickly revealed their bodies and headed into the distance with an unprecedented speed. There was terror on their faces, and they roared in voices that echoed in all directions.

Things like this happened in all the nests with ferocious beasts once the wind blew past them.

The thing that would happen after the wind began to blow was deeply branded in their memories. This was a disaster affecting the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean. Before the brunt of the disaster came, they had to search for a place where they could hide for a month.

If they were slow, then what awaited them would only be death.

There were numerous planets with green flora on them. When the wind blew past them, they instantly turned black and withered away, reduced to ashes. Soon, all the planets in the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean looked as if they had died.

Heaven Traversers had now migrated to a new place, but when the wind reached them, the expression of their Progenitor changed. With his fastest speed, he executed all his divine abilities, and with a bang, turned into a gigantic palm that enveloped all Heaven Traversers within it.

Virtue Rooters were a race possessing snake bodies. Once the wind whistled through space, all of them hid themselves deep underground.

Similar things happened everywhere within the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. All sorts of living creatures of all shapes and sizes, and even powerful ferocious beasts, reacted in this manner.

Because they knew... that the fifth kiln was about to be activated.

Chapter 975 The Kiln Activated

On the second day Dust Burners were in the process of activating the kiln, the wind in the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean became stronger. When hot waves surged into the sky, the wind had already spread through the entire area and were spreading to even farther places. Wherever it passed, all alien races and beasts fled as their expressions changed drastically in the face of the wind.

All the beasts Su Ming had met on the way to the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean in the past were all fleeing. The threat of death and the deep brand left in their memories caused them to break and cross over the borders set by other races to mark their territories. All kinds of different ferocious beasts could be seen in any place where they could hide. Even if some creatures were mortal enemies, they gave up on any ideas of fighting in this wind and only hid in silence.

On the third day, the wind from the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean had already disappeared. However, the wind between the inner part and the periphery had reached its strongest. A galactic wind had also stirred in the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

On the ground where Ninth Tribe was located was Dijiu Mo Sha, who was sitting there and exercising his breathing. However, his eyes flew open at that moment, and disbelief appeared on his face. He sensed the wind, and his tribe members fell silent. They had also sensed the scorching hot wind, and they too saw all the plants on the land turn black before floating away as ashes...

"The fifth kiln!" Dijiu Mo Sha said quickly.

There was a valley at the edge of the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean, located rather far away from the continent of Ninth Tribe. There were a dozen something black warships floating in midair at that place, and thousands of cultivators on the ground. They were nine old Frail Darknesses and Su Ming's fearless warriors.

When the galactic wind blew past them, they noticed it, but they did not pay any attention to it. Only the catwoman's expression changed the instant she sensed the wind.

"This is... the Burning Wind before the kiln is activated!"

There was quite a large number of cultivators who took the risk to come to the edge of the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean in hopes of obtaining a serendipity. They were cautious, but there were quite a few of them who turned tail and ran without any hesitation once they sensed the wind.

A galaxy away was Black Ink Planet. At that moment, all the people there were looking towards a single direction. It was... the direction of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Over there, they could see... a weak red light. It covered a huge area.

'The fifth kiln has been activated...' This was a sentence that echoed in the hearts of all those in Black Ink Planet.

Three days passed quickly. When the third day was over, the wind that filled the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean disappeared in the blink of an eye. It was like the calm before a storm.

Those who did not know the details would not pay too much attention to it. They would not be able to sense the bizarre air that existed between the time the wind appeared and disappeared.

The fog beyond Dust Burners' continent shrank swiftly. Once it enveloped all Dust Burners, even the land on which they lived disappeared from the galaxy.

By then, most of the living beings in Divine Essence Star Ocean had already found a place to hide. As they shuddered, they hoped that they would be able to avoid the kiln's fire.

However, there were also some ferocious beasts and madmen whose expressions were filled with greed and madness when the wind from the kiln disappeared.

All of these beings were existences who believed that they were worthy of entering the fifth kiln. To them, the activation of the fifth kiln was a disaster, but there was definitely a great serendipity waiting within it.

The fifth kiln was a place which caused great fear among a lot of people, but it was also a place which some people desired to enter. There were plenty of rumors regarding the fifth kiln. Even though there were few who could enter and leave it alive, it did not stop plenty of people from trying to enter.

The greatest of the desires was to obtain the fifth kiln. The second greatest... was to obtain a serendipity in the fifth kiln.

However, over the course of numerous years, no one managed to become the master of the fifth kiln, and slowly, this became a legend.

A piercing light was spreading from the location of the fifth kiln. It was caught in a state of being an illusion and being something real. Once Dust Burners disappeared, a loud bang erupted from the kiln.

A crimson red flame swept outwards in all directions like a wave. The high temperature from flames was difficult to put to words. Wherever it went, the galaxy would look as if it was about to melt.

Booms surged into the air, and the violent sounds rang through the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. As they reverberated in space, a crimson sea of flame erupted violently. The loud booms did not stop then, but instead began to sound like the might of heaven. The sea of fire swept out, and as layers of fire tumbled about, they spilled in all directions.

In the blink of an eye, they covered a boundless area. The place where Dust Burners lived was the closest to the flames and was the first to be affected. It was immediately enveloped by the crimson sea of fire. However, there were already no Dust Burners there. Once that place was covered by the sea of fire, the flames surged farther away.

Their speed was indescribable. In the blink of an eye, a small region within the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean turned crimson. The sea of fire continued erupting with flames and spreading outwards until it enveloped the entire core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. If it was compared to a circle, then anyone who looked from the distance would find that the center of this circle... was where the sea of fire was.

It continued spreading outwards and rumbling. Waves of flames continued bursting out from the fifth kiln, which was at the center of the sea of fire, as if there was no end to them

Planets were submerged, and continents were enveloped. Planets shuddered, and continents crumbled. All the living beings hidden within them needed to endure hot waves that would last nearly a month... or they would die.

As the sea of fire tumbled about and spread through the galaxy, one Void Beast had still not been enveloped by the flames. It was howling in terror and charging backwards without regard for anything. It originally did not belong to this place and had only been tamed by Xu Hui. It was the Void Beast that had brought Su Ming and his group to this place.

However, at that moment, fear occupied its entire body. It charged forward madly, but it could not escape from death. The sea of fire was already behind it. The flames that enveloped the area there were difficult to describe. In the blink of an eye, they closed in. The hot waves caused the galaxy to distort, and the Void Beast let out a roar of despair.

However, it did not receive any response. The sea of fire behind it did not pity it either. As booming sounds reverberated in space, the sea of fire stirred up a large wave as it tumbled forward. In fact, there were even a large number of struggling ferocious beasts contained in the sea of fire. Their bodies were being burnt to a crisp right before the crocodile beast's eyes, but their shrill screams of pain were drowned out by the loud booms from the sea of fire.

When the Void Beast saw the sea of fire surging towards it, about to devour it, a figure appeared in the galaxy. This figure was incredibly tall. He pressed his palm on the Void Beast, and it instantly disappeared without a trace. This person turned around and cast a glance at the sea of fire crashing towards him and, without any hesitation, left into the distance.

This person was naturally the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled!

Three days ago, he had had been near the kiln, but he did stay there for long. Instead, he left. At the moment, the sea of fire was pressing on aggressively behind Su Ming, but his expression was incredibly calm. With a step forward, he charged into the distance.

He wanted to go to the Relocation Vortex near Dust Burners' territory. Right then, he possessed the body created by the supreme treasure and could bring forth a power he would never had never possessed before. He wanted to borrow this current power... and tame the Resentful Wei before the purple flames appeared within the sea of fire from the kiln!

To Su Ming, that creature was the key to entering the fifth kiln. Based on Dijiu Mo Sha's words, he might still be able to enter, but it would be an extreme challenge. As for Dust

Burners' Progenitor's words, it was not that Su Ming did not believe him, but he needed to weigh his words.

'It is clear that he managed to tell that I'm not a Dust Burner, but he still activated the kiln for me. Does he want to have me remember the favor Dust Burners did for me...?

'But if the fifth kiln was so easy to enter, it wouldn't be one of the mysteries of Divine Essence Star Ocean. If I interpret it this way, then the kiln is a test. If I can enter it, then I will have to accept Dust Burners' favor. If I cannot enter and die in the flames, then it has nothing to do with Dust Burners.'

As Su Ming charged forward, a pensive look appeared in his eyes. But after a long time, resolve began to shine on his expression.

'Oh well, I won't ask Dust Burners to pay the price for chasing after my Master's life in the past.'

Su Ming shook his head and no longer thought about this. Instead, as the sea of fire behind him became increasingly more violent while surging forward, he shifted to the area beyond Dust Burners' territory, to the place of the Relocation Vortex.

He landed next to it, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes. He hesitated for a moment, which was a rare thing on him. However, in an instant, the uncertainty disappeared.

'If I want to enter the fifth kiln, I need a fire beast like that one!' Su Ming took a huge stride forward and stepped into the Relocation Vortex. In the span of a breath, his figure disappeared without a trace.

Five breaths later, booming sounds echoed in space. The heinous sea of fire instantly covered the vortex, then went past it with a loud bang.

On the first day the flames erupted from the kiln, all the regions within the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean turned into a sea. However, this sea was not formed by planets or water, but thick waves of fierce fire.

The palm that was formed by Heaven Traversers' Progenitor protected his people in the sea of fire. Virtue Rooters' tribe was covered by layers of snake fins. They covered all of the tribe's territories and stopped the sea of fire from spreading outwards.

When the second day arrived, the region between the inner part and the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean turned into a world of flames. The galaxy burned. The distortions formed under the high temperature turned into reality, as if it could distort all dimensions.

A disaster that had not been seen for years descended upon Divine Essence Star Ocean once more.

Flames continued spreading... While most living beings hid, several long arcs headed towards the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean at full speed. With the sea of fire right before them, they charged forward. Their goal... was the fifth kiln!

Chapter 976 Reverend Zi Long

The sea of fire continued raging. The crimson flames continued spreading outwards from the core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean. Soon, it filled up the entire area between the inner part and the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. High temperature covered the entire galaxy. Wherever the sea of fire passed, loud booming sounds would surge up.

This would last for nearly a month. During that time, the sea of fire would stretch to the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. It would envelop the entire place, so the cultivators of Black Ink Planet will be able to clearly see the galaxy burning.

At that moment, Su Ming was not within the galaxy that belonged to Divine Essence Star Ocean. Through the Relocation Vortex, he had already stepped into one of the mysteries in Divine Essence Star Ocean - the world in the vortex!

No one knew where it led. It was dark down there, as if there was no end to it. If anyone dared to open their eyes to look, they would be unable to help but feel as if they were immersed in eternal darkness.

Even Su Ming still had that feeling rise in him after looking at the darkness in the lower part of the world in the vortex.

He did not know how many years and secrets were buried down there. He did not know how many spirits and bodies of those who tried to lift the veil of this darkness had fallen.

The endless darkness underneath formed a stark contrast with the many colorful, jellyfish-like creatures above. Su Ming remained silent. Within the semi-transparent tunnel of the two connected vortices, he could not keep his body from floating forward.

He knew that the sea of fire was raging in the world outside, for the fifth kiln had already been activated. Whether or not he would be able to get the fifth stone and whether or not he would be able to get into the Fifth True World would depend entirely on whether he would be able to step into the fifth kiln.

Even if based on the words of Dust Burners' Progenitor, there was a high possibility that Su Ming was the new master of the fifth kiln, the prerequisite was that Su Ming was the son of Su Xuan Yi and his wife.

This was something Su Ming did not want to think about.

He looked at the semi-transparent tunnel beside him. At that moment, Xuan Shang and his groups' hearts were incredibly shaken. In fact, Xuan Shang was already wondering whether he should forcefully revoke the fusion by the supreme treasure.

However, right when this thought appeared in his head, Su Ming took a swift step forward. He did not move farther down the tunnel, but instead... With one step, he crashed into the wall of the tunnel. He even raised his hands as if he was seizing the wall and swiftly pulled it in two directions.

With a bang, the tunnel was instantly torn. Once Su Ming opened it, he took a step forward and stepped out of the semi-transparent tunnel.

"If you want to dissolve the fusion of the supreme treasure, you can do so at any time."

With Su Ming's experience, there was no way that he could not tell that there was a huge problem with the supreme treasure, and that it was in Xuan Shang's hands. He might not be able to become a main soul to control the body formed by the supreme treasure, but he could make it disassemble, forcing all the people to walk out.

Xuan Shang had originally thought to do this, but he had hesitated because he was worried he would provoke Su Ming to anger. However, if they did run into a life-threatening danger, he would naturally attack with everything he had, but... Su Ming had acted too quickly. Once he walked out of the semi-transparent tunnel, the tunnel fused together once more. Su Ming had brought the group out of the tunnel's pull and protection, and from then on they were completely situated inside the world of the vortex.

If Xuan Shang dissolved the transformation at that moment, what would await him would be only even greater danger. In anguish, Xuan Shang sighed in his heart and did not speak. He knew that Su Ming was not a fool and would not look for death without reason. If he did not have reason for confidence, he would not have done this sort of thing.

Since the start, Xu Hui remained silent. She would support all of Su Ming's actions. As for the bald crane, once it stepped into the world in the vortex, it looked to be in a daze again.

When Su Ming walked out of the tunnel, he raised his head and let out a long howl that shook the world. As he roared, the colorful, shining jellyfish-like creatures instantly withdrew. At the same time, another roar came from a place that was rather far away.

Su Ming stood still as he activated Ecang's presence. It immediately spread from the body formed by the supreme treasure, resulting in the offensive power erupting from the body to rise by leaps and bounds again. At the same time, Su Ming summoned the projection of his Ecang clone.

A gigantic tree appeared in a flash before disappearing. However, the body Su Ming controlled now exuded an offensive power that was infinitesimally close to those at the peak of Solar Kalpa Realm.

At the same time, a tunnel created with the projection creating a path and his soul acting as a lead was also swiftly forming. Once it was formed, Su Ming's Ecang clone would descend.

At that time, he could... fight against an Almighty in Mastery Realm!

Time passed breath by breath. Roars traveled forth ceaselessly from the darkness in the distance. From the voice, Su Ming could tell that the black Resentful Wei was using an indescribable speed to rush forth.

Gradually, Su Ming saw six balls of bright flame shining in the darkness ahead of him. Those were the Resentful Wei's six eyes!

"Come! You... are going to be mine!"

.....

As days passed, due to the fifth kiln coughing up four days' worth of crimson flames, the entire region within the inner part and periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean had been completely submerged in flames.

Countless living beings let out shrill screams of pain as their bodies burned to ashes. Cultivation planets struggled in the sea of fire, all the plants on them long dead.

There were continents that slowly reduced in size, crystals appearing on their edges.

Even the living creatures who loved fire by nature shuddered in fear when the sea of fire reached them. They did not dare to touch it and could only hide from it.

The sea of fire was still spreading. When the seventh day arrived, it finally reached the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean... and completely enveloped the entire galaxy within it.

The disaster of Divine Essence Star Ocean had arrived.

The continent where Ninth Tribe was located was empty at that moment. The sea of fire swept through its sky and burned the ground, crushed the mountains, and melted the living creatures. In the depths of the continent where the core of the land was located was a karst cave. At that moment, all the members of Ninth Tribe were hiding there, and in terror, they waited quietly for the sea of fire to disappear.

Dijiu Mo Sha sat at the entrance of the tunnel, which was located closest to the ground. Over there, he could sense the great heat and bangs that resounded from the world outside. There was nervousness on his face, but he was also wondering whether the activation of the fifth kiln... was related to Su Ming.

At the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean were the nine old Frail Darknesses and the others. They had stepped on the warships under the catwoman's warnings to leave Divine Essence Star Ocean at the fastest speed they could muster. At that moment, their warships floated in the galaxy between Divine Essence Star Ocean and Black Ink Planet. They looked over from the distance and saw a shocking scene they would never forget in their lives.

All of them had anxiety on their faces, because... their young master was still in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

While the nine old Frail Darknesses could fight against the high heat of the flames, searching for a person whose whereabouts were unknown in the vast galaxy was so difficult it was akin to finding a needle in a haystack.

That was why they could only wait.

As they waited, the nine old Frail Darknesses and the cultivators on the warships saw a person who caused their pupils to shrink and left their hearts in shock.

He was a slender middle-aged man dressed in a long purple robe. He stood calmly in the galaxy and looked at Divine Essence Star Ocean from the distance. He looked incredibly normal and there was nothing strange about him... but laying behind him was a ferocious beast that was several tens of thousands of feet tall.

That beast... was a dragon!

It was an entirely crimson dragon with thick flames spreading out from its body. The temperature of the fire caused the galaxy to distort, as if it was slightly difficult for it to bear with it. By the looks of it, those flames from the dragon seemed to be even stronger than the crimson flames that covered the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean.

The dragon's mighty pressure was even more shocking. The nine old Frail Darknesses had only cast him a look from the distance, but they already felt an oppressive force pressing down on their bodies. This clearly meant that the dragon's power surpassed those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm, but it was not in Lunar Kalpa Realm. It was in Solar Kalpa Realm!

Even if they were very far away, the nine old Frail Darknesses could still feel their skins cracking, and they could sense their cultivation bases becoming chaotic. Their hair turned a burnt yellow, and they were forced to make their warships retreat to a very far off place.

The man in the purple robe was incredibly close to the crimson fire dragon, but not a single change in expression could be detected on his face. By the looks of it, the crimson dragon was clearly incredibly respectful of the man. There was even a slight hint of fear within its eyes.

"Reverend Zi Long!" The nine old Frail Darknesses' expressions changed. Once they looked at one another, they saw the shock in each other's eyes.

"This should be Reverend Zi Long, from the Fourth True World. That place has always been incredibly mysterious, and even we do not have much understanding towards it. We only know that the other three True Worlds send out a person to deliver a large amount of materials to the Fourth True World once in a while..."

"We might have never met Reverend Zi Long before, but in Divine Essence Star Ocean, the only person wearing a purple robe who is a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death and who has a crimson dragon by his side... can only be Reverend Zi Long from the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping a lookout over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, no one else."

"The fifth kiln, huh? I didn't expect that the activation of the fifth kiln would actually bring Reverend Zi Long to this place!" As the nine old Frail Darknesses sent their thoughts to each other, their expressions changed suddenly, and they looked towards the galaxy behind them simultaneously.

There were intense, loud bangs surging forward from over there. Those sounds spread in all directions, and the hearts of people who heard them shook involuntarily.

This trembling even caused their cultivation bases to begin changing and caused the strongest power to erupt from the nine old Frail Darknesses because they were unable to control their bodies. It was as if only by doing so could they be able to make their power not spill out and leave their bodies.

As for the fearless warriors and the catwoman, their faces turned pale as their expressions changed. All of them immediately sat down cross-legged and fought back with great difficulty.

The booming sounds came even closer, and everyone saw the shape of a huge centipede in the galaxy. It had turned into a long arc while heading over at an incredible speed. That centipede was purplish black and looked incredibly hideous. There was... not a single person on it. This was a ferocious beast moving by itself.

It moved incredibly fast and closed in on the place within an instant. Waves of mighty pressure spread out into the area. It caused the crimson dragon beside the purple-robed man to continuously let out low growls.

"It's been a long while, Zi Long. Looks like this time, you and I are the only ones who did not enter isolation to train." A hoarse voice that sounded like metal chafing against metal echoed in space.

Chapter 977 Resentful Wei!

As the voice echoed in space, the nine old Frail Darknesses immediately saw the one hundred thousand feet long centipede shrink. Within an instant, a purplish black light spread out. The centipede then turned into a teenage boy dressed in a white robe.

The teenager might have been dressed in a white robe, but the marks of a centipede clearly covered his face, causing him to look incredibly ferocious. Anyone who saw him would be incredibly shocked.

Judging by how he acted, he seemed to know Reverend Zi Long.

"Can you even be considered a person?" The man in purple robes turned his head around and cast the teenager a flat glance. Reverend Zi Long was incredibly handsome, and there was an indescribable temperament contained in his expression.

"Haha! It doesn't matter whether I am a person, but this time, it's just you and me. I wonder how many among those in the galaxy have awakened. Whether or not we will work together will depend on just one sentence from you." The teenager in white robes was completely unconcerned with Reverend Zi Long's words and spoke with a laugh.

"Naturally, we'll be working together," the purple-robed man replied calmly.

"Alright, let's meet just outside the fifth kiln."

The teenager in white smiled faintly. However, that smile seemed like an illusion. His emotions could not be seen in it. He turned around, and when his gaze swept past the nine old Frail Darknesses, a smile appeared once more at the corners of his lips, and he even licked them.

The nine old Frail Darknesses's hearts immediately trembled. Their bodies became limp under his gaze. They were not the only ones affected. The thousands of fearless warriors and the catwoman around them felt the same way, and the numbness they felt was even stronger.

That was due to a mighty pressure that was so strong that they could not resist descending on them, and all of this was due to a single gaze from the teenager in white.

'A Master of Fate, Lives, and Death! This is also an Almighty!!' The nine old Frail Darknesses felt their hearts let out a thump.

"They are servants of Kalpa Lord Dao Chen. If you have the guts to eat them, then I am very willing to enjoy your performance, Sir Wu," the purple-robed man said faintly.

"Dao Chen? That old man who is constantly in isolation?"

The teenager in white smiled and averted his gaze from the nine old Frail Darknesses. Instead, he lifted his right hand, and with a hook, the pale catwoman was immediately surrounded by a force and shifted in front of the white-robed teenager, in a manner completely out of her control.

"You look pretty good. I lack a servant girl on my trip here. I'll take you," the teenager said with a smile after sniffing the catwoman. He had still listened to Reverend Zi Long's words, though. Dao Chen might have been in isolation for many years, but he was a Kalpa Lord, and he was someone that a person in Mastery Realm like him could not provoke.

That was why he treated these people as if they did not exist in his eyes, but catwoman's presence was somewhat beneficial to him. He turned this matter over in his head and believed that with his status, even if he kidnapped the woman, Dao Chen would not egress and come to him to bring trouble.

The catwoman shuddered. Terror appeared in her eyes and on her face, and she instinctively spoke with a quiver in her voice. "My-my master is—"

"I don't care who your master is!" The teenager swung his arm, and impatience appeared on his face. At that moment, a row of sharp teeth was revealed in his mouth. The color of those teeth... was black.

Then, the teenager rushed into Divine Essence Star Ocean within an instant. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared without a trace.

The purple-robed man did not bother with all this. He had said those words earlier because of the patronage True Morning Dao World provided to the Fourth True World over the years. As for the other matters, he would not interfere in them.

Zi Long did not find anything strange about the white-robed teenager's actions. There was a savageness to this person's origins and status, so he would naturally not control himself like other cultivators.

When Zi Long saw that the white-robed teenager had stepped into the galaxy, he fell into a period of contemplative silence before he, too, took a step into the galaxy. With just three steps, he had already shifted and covered an endless distance, disappearing from the limits of the nine old Frail Darknesses' vision.

Once the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean was enveloped by crimson flames and Reverend Zi Long as well as the white-robed teenager appeared beyond the galaxy, strange changes occurred in three spots within the galaxy.

The first change came from Flame Fiends's planet. It was the spot where Xuan Shang and his group had headed by seizing the opportunity caused by the chaos brought by the bald crane and obtained Flame Fiend's blood. At that moment, besides the rumbles of the flames in the planet covered by the sea of fire, not a single sound could be heard.

All of the Flame Fiends were cowering underground. They were all kneeling while trembling in fear.

Anyone who looked over would find they were in a gigantic karst cave. At the center was dried up lava ash that had gathered in a lake and solidified. At the center of the lake were numerous Flame Fiends packed densely together and kowtowing on the ground.

Complicated and difficult incantations spread out ceaselessly from the shivering Flame Fiends' mouths, and it sounded as if there was a certain level of cooperation with the booming sounds from the sea of fire in the world outside.

As the incantations reverberated in the air and the sea of fire in the world outside let out loud bangs, the solidified lava ash lake surrounded by numerous Flame Fiends let out cracking sounds. Cracks appeared on its surface.

They spread out and gradually grew denser, causing the solidified surface of the lake to look like a spider's web.

The second place where a strange change occurred was on a gigantic meteor floating in the sea of fire in the region between the inner part and the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

It was a meteor that was nearly ten thousand feet tall. It floated in the sea of fire, but if anyone looked closely at it, they would find that this was not a meteor, but a human head!

More accurately speaking, it was a caved human head. If Su Ming was there, he would be able to recognize at first glance that this was a God's head he saw when he and Dijiu Mo Sha were flying past the place.

At that moment, cracks appeared on the head in the sea of fire. They spread out, as if wanting to tear the head into pieces.

There was also a third place where an abnormal change occurred. It was... a mountain, a gigantic mountain that towered over the clouds and whose summit could not be seen.

That mountain stood tall in the galaxy, and it was the one about which Su Ming had heard a beautiful legend who caused grief for the bald crane!

Husband Gazing Mountain!

The legend spoke of a woman who stood eternally at the boundless summit. She looked at the galaxy as if she was watching her deceased husband. The abnormal change that occurred on this mountain did not happen at the distant summit. Instead, it came from a gigantic cave at the mountainside. Low growls were coming out from it.

Those roars did not sound as if they came from a human, but from some type of ferocious beast. After a moment, a gigantic ferocious beast that was thousands of feet tall walked out.

It was an entirely black boar!

Its long fur hung down from its body at first, but once it walked out, all that fur stood up to show off a light that was unparalleled in its sharpness. As the beast stood outside the cave, the sea of fire swept past it, but did not manage to hurt it even a single bit.

The board stood quietly outside the cave, its head raised to look at the misty and barely discernible summit. When it looked over there, pain surfaced its eyes.

It threw its head back and let out a loud roar. It reverberated in the galaxy and caused the sea of fire to tumble backwards, clearing the area around the mountain of flame.

As the boar raised roared, several tears fell from the corners of its eyes. However, before the tears fell on the ground, they had already disappeared without a trace. Soon, the creature's body shrank down until it turned into an incredibly plump human. His eyes were crimson red, and he had a set of tusks in his mouth. With pain hidden in his expression, along with a great self-loathing, he charged towards the sea of fire.

All of this happened on the seventh day since the fifth kiln started spewing fire. When the eighth day arrived, at the spot where the fifth kiln was in the core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean, the crimson flames disappeared, and blue flames erupted.

The aggressiveness of the blue flames and the high temperature they stirred were several hundreds of times stronger than those of the crimson flames. Almost at the instant they appeared, they melted the galaxy. Layers upon layers of space fell backwards and turned into emptiness.

At the same time, it looked as if the blue flames could devour the crimson flames. They spread out swiftly, and wherever the blue flames went, they replaced the red!

The sea of fire tumbled about violently. Those who understood the fifth kiln knew that once the blue flames came, the second wave of flames had erupted from the fifth kiln.

After that was the third wave - the purple flames, and then would come the final wave... the destructive black flames.

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, three days were gone.

The plump person continued onward in the face of the sea of fire. He was the first to come into contact with the blue flames among the few who had chosen to enter. Within them, even his speed slowed down by quite a considerable margin, but he still charged forward without care.

On the seventh day after the blue flames had burst forth, all the flames within Divine Essence Star Ocean became blue. The high temperature spreading out from the blue sea of flame killed many living creatures, and it also caused the nine old Frail Darknesses to retreat once again while watching the distance with shock.

Black Ink Planet was now swathed in dead silence. Almost all the cultivators there were looking in the same direction from a distance. The blue there was reflected in their eyes as indestructible flames.

On the seventh day the blue sea of fire spread out, the lava ash lake in the planet where the Flame Fiends had been worshiping for many days shattered with a bang. A dried up arm stretched out from the depths, and slowly, a skeletal existence who was incredibly thin and shriveled up stood up from within. As its body floated up, a complete body was revealed.

It was a cultivator's body. He was an old man with a hunched back and thin hair. He was entirely naked, and when he opened his eyes, dark light shone within them.

Zealous shouts immediately erupted from the mouths of Flame Fiends around the area once the old man appeared. All of the Flame Fiends prostrated themselves on the ground in excitement and kowtowed continuously, causing the ground to shake.

The old man lowered his head and looked at the numerous worshipers below him. There was a vacant expression on his face, and a huge tear on his abdomen. It could be seen that there were only black bones within his body, without any organs to be seen.

"How... many years have I slept? Who... am I?"

The old man closed his eyes. After a moment, he opened them, and the vacant look in them was gone. Instead, a strange and enchanting light shone from within them, and the wound on the old man's stomach healed on its own.

"I am the Emperor of Flame Fiends. I am the master of flames!" The old man threw his head back and roared. As he did so, he moved and disappeared within an instant. When he reappeared, he was already in the blue sea of fire in the world outside.

"The fifth kiln..."

The old man grinned, his expression incredibly hideous. With a sharp intake of breath, some of the blue flames from the blue sea of fire charged into his mouth and he devoured them just like that. The old man's eyes sparkled, then he turned into a long arc to charge into the depths of the galaxy.

Wherever he passed, the blue flames would be reduced, and it was due to him devouring them as he moved past them.

However, the blue sea of flame covered the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean. Compared to it, the portion the old man devoured was insignificant. However, the terrifying aspects of the old man could be seen based on this.

.....

On that same seventh day since the blue sea of flames had spread out, more cracks appeared on the head of the statue in blue flames. Eventually, it shattered with a bang.

As the numerous shattered stones fell backwards, a huge man carrying a gourd behind his back walked out. He was dressed in hides, and his expression was filled with a stern, awe-inspiring air, especially his brows. They were yellow, giving his entire person a strange air.

"The Ancestral Spirit's brain doesn't taste bad at all... but the tasted was somewhat weird once I roasted it well... the temperature of the fire might have been wrong, hmm... That's right, I'll go get more fire clay next time."

As the man mumbled to himself, he licked his fingers, and as if he felt that the taste was not bad, he decided that he might as well put his whole thumb in his mouth. Looking like he was sucking on it, he cast a glance at the blue flames around him, and then, completely unbothered by them, walked towards the depths of the galaxy.

He did not move quickly, but with each step he took, he would make the blue flames seethe. He stepped into the sea of fire while still sucking on his thumb and gradually left into the distance.

While all of this was happening, in the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean was a place that originally had a Relocation Vortex but was now submerged in a sea of fire. A roar rang out there, and the blue flames stilled under it!

The still blue flames formed a stark contrast with the tumbling sea of fire around them. As the roar echoed, more flames became still, and the area grew quiet. In the blink of an eye, all the flames in a circular area of one hundred thousand feet in the galaxy... became still!

As they did so, a black horse with two dragon heads rushed out of the Relocation Vortex covered by flames while their roars shook the galaxy.

That horse was several thousands of feet tall. Once it appeared, the color of the still sea of fire that stretched of one hundred thousand feet turned entirely black, and the flames surged at the horse to surround it. If anyone saw this from above, this would definitely have a strong premonition regarding this.

The one hundred thousand feet wide area of sea of fire seemed... to be rejoicing and... worshipping the horse as if it had met its king!

The black horse lifted its head and once again let out a shocking roar. There was an incredibly great pride in its roar, along with an indescribable grudge against all the living!

It's back was not empty, though. There was a person sitting on it...

Naturally, this was the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled. There was fatigue on his face, but his eyes were shining brightly, with great confidence and vigor.

"Resentful Wei, from now on, I will kill all living beings who want to kill you. This is the promise I made with you, and it is a promise to the entire universe!"

The black horse fell silent, then a moment later, resolve appeared in its eyes and it roared again, as if it was responding to Su Ming's oath, but also like it was swearing its own oath.

Chapter 978 All the Old Monsters Have Come

Amid Resentful Wei's roars, the one hundred thousand feet wide sea of fire surrounding the black horse turned into a gigantic vortex that seemed to stir up an unprecedented circle in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Su Ming closed his tired eyes. The scenes of the trip to the world in the vortex rose in his head. After some time, when he opened his eyes, a brilliant glint shone in them.

"We... will head to the fifth kiln!" Su Ming had the body he controlled raise its right hand and caress Resentful Wei's fur as he sent his thought to it. The black horse's two dragon heads rose swiftly, and as a roar reverberated in space, Resentful Wei charged forward with a dash.

It was so quick that within an instant, it already closed a distance of one hundred thousand feet.

As the horse charged forward, the sea of black fire surrounding it was also pushed forward, as if the horse was traveling against the flow of the flames.

At that moment, along with Su Ming, there were six living beings who were moving towards the fifth kiln in the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean. One of them was the handsome Reverend Zi Long dressed in a purple robe!

There was also the strange, wicked, and overbearing white-robed teenager who was actually a centipede, as well as the human who was the furred boar and had roared below Husband Gazing Mountain. There was also Flame Fiend's progenitor and the yellow-browed man who had devoured the brains of an Ancestral Spirit.

These six people executed their divine abilities and turned into six long arcs which charged to the source of the sea of fire through the sea of fire.

This was the seventh day since the fifth kiln had sent forth blue flames. Once this day went by, it marked the fifteenth day since the sea of fire had erupted in the galaxy. At that moment, a hint... of purple finally appeared around the fifth kiln!

Right when the purple flames appeared, they immediately made it seem like the sea of blue fire was shuddering and showing signs of dying out. It was as if the blue flames were sentient and did not dare to burn before the purple flames.

After a moment, the purple flames erupted with a bang and swept out in all directions, intending to cover Divine Essence Star Ocean for the third time. Once it did so, it would be followed by the final black flame of destruction. Only when seven days after that passed Divine Essence Star Ocean disaster dissipate.

On the third day since the purple sea of fire had spread out, a long arc charged past the area beyond the place where purple flames surrounded the fifth kiln with a whistle. Within that long arc was an old man. He was thin and shriveled, but there was a strange and bewitching light in his eyes. He was mostly naked, and there was a huge bump on his back. There was also little hair on his head. Only a few locks hung down and floated in the air as he moved forward.

This old man was naturally Flame Fiend's Progenitor. He was the closest to this place, which was why he was the first to arrive. On the way, he had devoured all flames around him, and had even tried to devour some of the purple ones.

Greed appeared in his eyes as he arrived at his destination. He squatted down halfway to it and stared at the fifth kiln, which was surrounded by flames. The spot in which he stayed might have seemed as if it was incredibly close to the fifth kiln, but in truth, there was still some distance between them. After some time, the old man blew a shrill whistle, and with one move, charged towards the fifth kiln.

A loud bang rang out, and a powerful rebound shot out from within the fifth kiln and spread through a circular area of one million feet, causing the thin old man to shake so much that he immediately tumbled backwards upon passing one hundred feet. Only when he was forced back all that distance did he stop. A ruthless look appeared in his eyes, and as he let out a low growl, his eyes sparkled for a moment before he forced down that ruthlessness in him.

'It's not time yet... The purple flames in this place are still rife. I'll have to wait for it to dissipate slightly. Only during the instant the black flames of destruction are about to erupt will I have the chance to rush in.'

A contemplative look appeared in the thin old man's face. After a moment, he let out a few cold chuckles before deciding that he might as well crouch down in the sea of fire and wait for the instant the purple flames dissipated and the black flames were about to erupt forth.

The old man's body was thin and shriveled, but his head was not small. His body looked incredibly discordant, and most of his skin was filled with wrinkles. If anyone saw him, they would be unable to help the disgust that would rise within them.

The old man crouched there, and perhaps since he had been waiting for quite a long time, he started humming a song that was unique to his people, the Flame Fiends.

"Ding dong ding... dong ding dong... gru gru... waha waha..."

His voice reverberated in the sea of flame, possessing an incredibly bizarre rhythm. As he crouched with his head lowered, he moved his fingers around and swung them continuously. His originally bizarre figure coupled with that strange song caused him to exude a presence that could make a person's skin crawl.

He hummed the song filled with a gloomy air, and on the fourth day since the purple sea of fire had spread out, another long arc suddenly charged over from the area beyond the fifth kiln.

That long arc was so quick that it was practically shooting through space. After a moment, it closed in and turned into an incredibly plump person. When he approached the area, the sea of fire let out an intense bang.

A mighty pressure that could make a person suffocate swiftly spread out of the plump person's body. Even though he was out in the galaxy, he was still panting for breath. As he did so, it sounded like a boar was snorting.

He strode forward with large strides. Once he stopped beyond the fifth kiln, he stared at it. A crimson glare shone in his eyes, and as he panted, he revealed a set of tusks.

"Zhu You Cai... waha waha, Zhu You Cai..." A piercing voice reverberated in space. Flame Fiends' Progenitor swayed and lifted his head to look at the plump person.

"Others gaze at their husbands, and you too bring good fortune to your husband... Ding dong ding... Others whine, and you too suffer from the brunt of other people's grudges..." When Flame Fiend's Progenitor spoke in a piercing voice, there was still that bizarre rhythm to his speech as if he was not speaking, but singing.

The plump person looked towards the Flame Fiends' Progenitor with a cold stare.

"You just woke up and haven't eaten to your fill, right?" he asked coldly.

This question was incredibly abrupt, stunning the thin old man to be momentarily. At the moment he saw that the old man was stunned, the plump person known as Zhu You Cai rushed forward towards him. Wherever he went, the sea of fire would surge up and surround him. In an instant, he looked as if he had turned into a gigantic ball of flames.

He crashed into the thin and shriveled old man.

With it, the galaxy trembled, and the sea of fire tumbled backwards in all directions, as if a huge wave had been stirred up.

The thin and shriveled old man tumbled backwards as well. When he was forced ten thousand feet back, he raised his head, opened his mouth, and revealed a mouthful of blackish yellow teeth. As for the plump person, he was also forced back as he stared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The two of them stared at each other for a moment before killing intent appeared in their eyes.

Yet at that moment, the two of them turned their heads at the same time and looked at the galaxy in the distance.

Several breaths later, a man hobbled over. He held a gourd in his hand, and as he walked over, he drank from it, occasionally burping.

His hair was black, but his brows were yellow. They were so long that they grew past his ears. On his body was a strange, sweet aroma, intoxicating anyone who took a whiff of it.

Once he closed in, the yellow-browed man cast a sideways glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Zhu You Cai. A faint smile appeared on his face and he chose to sit by the side. Once he drank a mouthful of wine from the gourd, he sighed and said, "The two of you can't fight..."

Right when he finished saying this sentence, he suddenly let out a faint gasp of surprise, then turned his head to look towards the galaxy behind him. Flame Fiends' Progenitor and the plump person also looked over.

Right before their eyes, the purple sea of fire began seething intensely. As it tumbled about, a gigantic vortex spread out with a bang. From it, black flames that were starkly different from the purple flames tumbled out.

At the instant the trio in the area saw the black flames, their eyes gained a focused glint. The three of them knew each other, and they did not find it odd that they met in this place. Yet now, the black flames spreading out from the vortex in the galaxy gave them an incredibly unfamiliar feeling.

After a moment, the black flames from the vortex in the galaxy came charging towards them with a bang. At the same time they closed in, the vortex shrank down. When it appeared in the area beyond the fifth kiln, it completely disappeared to reveal a two dragon-headed Resentful Wei within it.

Su Ming controlled the body formed by the supreme treasure which was sitting cross-legged on Resentful Wei's back. At that moment, he opened his eyes and cast a cold glance at the three people whose gazes had fallen on him.

Resentful Wei also lifted its head and looked at the trio with an aloof and prideful expression.

At the instant Su Ming saw the trio, his expression remained the same, but there wariness rose in his heart. The three people had strange appearances, but the mighty pressure spreading out from their bodies was nothing ordinary. They were clearly... Almighties who had become Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death.

However, he did not know whether they were in Mastery Realm... or Fate Realm!

While Su Ming was sizing up the trio's power, the three of them were also measuring him up. They had been able to tell at first glance that the unfamiliar presence he exuded was slightly mixed. At its weakest, this mixed power reached Lunar Kalpa Realm, but at its strongest... it surpassed Solar Kalpa Realm and would allow him to fight against those in Mastery Realm.

Besides, the black horse under Su Ming's body also caused the three people to focus their gazes. The mighty pressure spreading out from the horse belonged to those in Mastery Realm. Clearly, this creature was incredibly extraordinary. Furthermore, the three of them saw that once the horse appeared, the purple sea of fire around them started changing in color. It looked as if it would no longer remain purple, but would change to black. This phenomenon caused the trio's hearts to still, and all of them gave up on the thought of testing this newcomer.

After all, there was not a single weakling who would be able to come here while facing the purple flames.

Su Ming averted his gaze and did not say a single word. He continued to sit cross-legged on the Resentful Wei, just closed his eyes and began circulating his cultivation base to rest. The three might be Almighties, but there was nothing about them that Su Ming should fear. It did not matter whether it was the power of the Resentful Wei or the offensive power provided to him by the body formed from the supreme treasure, Su Ming had enough confidence to stand up against them.

Besides, he still had two times he could tell the Sand Spirit to attack.

All of these were key to Su Ming's confidence in obtaining the fifth stone, which had led to him to this place.

1. Others *gaze at their husbands*, and you too, *bring good fortune to your partner*... Ding dong ding... Others *whine*, and you too, *suffer from the brunt of other people's grudges*: Let's look at pair 1 -> Gaze at their husbands + bring good fortune to your partner = The first is 望夫 (wang4 fu1), and the second is also 旺夫 (wang4 fu1). If you notice it, the pronunciation is the same, but the characters are different. Pair 2 -> whine + suffer from the brunt of other people's grudges = 哀怨 (ai1 yuan4) and 挨怨 (ai1 yuan4). The same thing.

If you noticed it, then you will find that in the first half of both pairs, the subject is the doer, and in the second half, the subject mentioned is the receiver. So the old man is basically mocking Zhu You Cai that he gets the brunt of things.

Chapter 979 Enter the Kiln

Su Ming's arrival might have attracted the trio's attention, but this didn't last for long. For these three old monsters with mysterious pasts, the level of threat Su Ming brought to them was not great.

However, those who can survive to their age are naturally all farsighted and scheming foxes. The faces might not reveal anything, but they all had different thoughts in their hearts.

Yet those who could come to this place with the purple flames charging towards them would never be seeking death. If someone came, they had to have some hidden methods, and because of that, the trio would not provoke Su Ming too much. After all, the group had not entered the fifth kiln, and the instant when the purple flames disappeared and the black flames erupted would only last for the blink of an eye. It was still uncertain whether they could enter the fifth kiln, so there was no need to attack at full strength and instead give others the chance to enter.

As for Flame Fiends' Progenitor and the plump Zhu You Cai's fight, it had been just a warmup. It was a form of greeting between the two of them.

Based on principle, these two people's relationship shouldn't be too good, but in truth... they were sitting together at that moment. In fact... while the plump Zhu You Cai was sitting in the sea of fire, the thin and shriveled Flame Fiends' Progenitor was crouching on his shoulder. He was also still humming that strange song of his.

Zhu You had his eyes shut, as if he was listening to it. No one knew what sort of hidden emotions were stirring under that apathetic expression of his.

The yellow-browed man, on the other hand, was lying not too far away, snoring.

'These are three incredibly strange old monsters,' Su Ming said quietly in his heart after sparing them a glance. He closed his eyes after that, but he did not know that if there was a fifth person in the area, then when looking at the four of them, that person would feel that Su Ming was also strange old monster.

After all, Su Ming was sitting alone on a two dragon-headed black horse within a sea of fire. This sight would also give a unique feeling to others.

As time passed, the seventh day since the start of the purple flames came, and it marked the final day before they dissipated. The flames beyond the fifth kiln had already reached a certain degree of heat, and the booming from the flames became the only sound in the place.

Suddenly, the yellow-browed man yawned and rubbed his eyes, then placed his right thumb into his mouth and began sucking on it. With a sideways glance, he looked at the galaxy in the distance.

At the same time, the humming Flame Fiends' Progenitor let his voice die in his throat. A sharp look flashed briefly in his eyes. When he focused his gaze at the distant galaxy, a ghastly, cold smile appeared on the corners of his lips.

The plump Zhu You Cai opened his eyes slowly. A ferocious red glint appeared in them as he stared at the galaxy in the distance.

After a moment, a piercing whistle spread through the area and drowned out the booming sounds of the sea of fire. When Su Ming opened his eyes to look over, he saw a centipede that was several tens of thousands of feet long moving towards them.

The centipede's thousand feet moved together, making its speed surpass even that of lighting. At a glance, the creature was still in the distance, but in the blink of an eye, it closed in on the group. The centipede with one thousand feet stopped abruptly. Its body shrank and turned into a teenager dressed in white. There was a woman beside him, and needless to say, it was the catwoman.

At that moment, her face was pale and her eyes were without focus. There were two black holes on her throat, as if she had been bitten by poisonous fangs.

"Oh hoh, it sure is lively here."

The white-robed teenager smiled faintly. His face was beaming. He swept his gaze past the three old monsters, then shifted to Su Ming. It stopped on him for a moment.

Su Ming also looked at the white-robed teenager, remaining as calm as ever. Not a single hint of emotion could be seen on his face, but the white-robed teenager naturally did not know that when Su Ming saw the catwoman, a wave of killing intent had already risen in his heart.

This killing intent was not targeted towards the catwoman, but the white-robed teenager.

The catwoman had stayed together with the nine old Frail Darknesses. Now that she appeared here, there was a high possibility that a disaster had fallen on the nine old Frail Darknesses' heads, and the instigator for all of this was naturally the white-robed teenager before him.

Almost the moment the white-robed teenager appeared and spoke, another rumble came from the galaxy. That rumble was actually a ferocious beast's roar which belonged to a crimson dragon. It was swimming about in the sea of fire while between its horns a purple-robed man sat cross-legged.

This man was incredibly handsome, but he was filled with an indifferent air. Clearly, he was not a person of many words. When the crimson dragon showed up, he reached the group in the span of a few breaths.

His arrival caused the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor to become strangely bewitching. A frightful expression also appeared on Zhu You Cai's face as he remained seated.

Only the yellow-browed man continued sucking on his thumb after he cast a sideways glance at them. Outsiders could not tell that he had already become incredibly wary in his heart.

He sensed an incredibly great danger from the purple-robed man, and it was the greatest in this area. As for the second... it did not come from Zhu You Cai or Flame Fiend's Progenitor, and neither did it come from the white-robed teenager that was the centipede with one thousand feet. Instead, it came from... Su Ming.

While the yellow-browed man felt wary, the crimson dragon the purple-robed man sat upon suddenly raised its head, and an incredibly nervous expression appeared on its face. With an incredibly great hostility, it looked at the Resentful Wei Su Ming sat upon.

The Resentful Wei raised its head coldly and looked towards the crimson dragon. Its expression was one of pride, and a hint of derision also appeared on its face.

As if it had been provoked by this derision, the crimson dragon immediately opened its mouth and let out a swift roar, but right when this roar reverberated in the sea of fire, the four eyes from Resentful Wei's two dragon heads shone with a cold glare at the same time, and they let out low growls.

The purple-robed man was naturally Reverend Zi Long. His gaze fell on the Resentful Wei, and then he looked at Su Ming. Without any expression on his face, he patted the crimson dragon's horn. The dragon immediately lowered its head, moved, and brought Reverend Zi Long to the side. Once it did so, Zi Long closed his eyes, and appeared to completely ignore the people around him.

The white-robed teenager that was the centipede with one thousand feet smiled at that moment, then walked towards Zi Long. He sat down not too far away, and the catwoman behind him followed after him with a glazed look.

Su Ming swept his gaze across the area, already able to tell quite a number of things.

There were two or three camps. One of them was the purple-robed man and the white-robed teenager. These two were the last to arrive, making it clear that they had been quite a long distance away. With the addition of the catwoman, Su Ming could tell that these two... should have come from an area beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"The purple-robed man is Reverend Zi Long. He is an Almighty Master of Fate, Lives, and Death from the forces of power from the Fourth True World stationed to keep watch over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence! As for the white-robed teenager who captured the catwoman, I've heard a few things about him. He's a rogue cultivator, but is affiliated with the four Great True Worlds. His family name is Wu, and his origins are incredibly mysterious," Xu Hui explained in a solemn voice.

This proved Su Ming's guess.

The second camp was Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Zhu You Cai, who had fought against each other just a few days ago. As for the yellow-browed man, he seemed normal, but from his location alone, Su Ming could tell that he did not want to be too close to either side, yet it could be vaguely seen that both sides did not want to get too close to him either.

This relationship was incredibly subtle. Anyone without sufficient experience would find it difficult to notice the details and discover these clues.

When Su Ming understood all this, a barely noticeable smile appeared on the corners of his lips. The power between the three camps was clearly not balanced, and the strongest camp should be Reverend Zi Long and the white-robed teenager.

The second strongest should be the camp formed by Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Zhu You Cai, whose power should be on equal grounds with that of the yellow-browed man.

Because of that, the yellow-browed man naturally became an important point. If he helped Flame Fiend's side, then they would be able to overcome Zi Long and the white-robed teenager. And even if he continued working alone, he would still be able to obtain some benefits. After all, both sides would not want to pressure the other too much.

Su Ming could also obtain some benefits in this complicated relationship. After all, his existence became another important point in other people's eyes. However, the degree of this importance would depend on Su Ming's offensive ability shown later on.

When the seventh day was about to end, no one else came. Su Ming knew that there was a high possibility that along with him, these were the only people who would enter the fifth kiln.

As the purple sea of fire vanished, besides the yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long whose expressions remained the same, all the other people spotted changes. Flame Fiends' Progenitor stared in the direction of the fifth kiln, while Zhu You Cai's expression turned grim. The white-robed teenager became fierce. They were all waiting for the instant the purple flames vanished and the black flames erupted.

Besides the booming sounds of the flames, the place was quiet. In this comparative silence, Su Ming stared intently at the fifth kiln one hundred thousand feet away. Even though everything that he saw at that moment were purple flames, they started showing signs of diminishing with the passage of minutes.

After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, Su Ming saw the purple flames beyond the fifth kiln disappear!

At the instant this happened, he saw an incomparably large kiln. This kiln was green, and Su Ming did not know what sort of metal had been used to make it. It exuded a mighty pressure that caused people's hearts to shudder.

Almost at the instant the purple flames disappeared, the yellow-browed man became took a step forward. He was so quick that he charged towards the fifth kiln in an instant. When he moved forward, his brows danced in space. They transformed into two yellow dragons and surrounded his body, causing his presence to reach a shocking, monstrous degree.

The second to move was Zi Long. He patted the crimson dragon with his right hand, and the dragon disappeared. As it moved forward, a strange roar came from its body. It turned into a long arc, changing into a purple dragon. With a presence that caused the galaxy around it to shudder, it rushed forward with a bang.

They were followed by the three people, with Su Ming being the last.

The Resentful Wei beneath him let out a roar. As the sea of fire tumbled around, they turned into a powerful grudge that could not be forced out of existence. The black did not signify destruction, but resentment!

Chapter 980 Gamble

Su Ming stared at the fifth kiln one hundred thousand feet away. At first glance, the kiln seemed like it was made of bronze, and it exuded an ancient and primitive presence. But at the same time, when he looked closely at it, he could see layers of blood!

The bloodstained appearance seemed to bear witness to how this item had traveled through space to come to this place from the Fifth True World. The process had to have been filled with horrors, and it was likely that Su Xuan Yi and his wife had forced their way out through one encirclement after another.

Numerous months had passed since then, and plenty of things had disappeared in the long river of history. However, the blood on the fifth kiln surpassed the power of time and continued telling its tale, causing all those who saw it for the first time to shudder.

At that moment, once the purple flames disappeared, a short period of tranquility appeared around the fifth kiln. Su Ming did not know for how long this period of tranquility would last, but based on the other's actions, it would pass in the blink of an eye.

The first to cross the one hundred thousand feet wide galaxy was the yellow-browed man. He was so fast that he closed in on the fifth kiln in the blink of an eye. As the two yellow dragons roared while surrounding him, he did not slow down in the slightest. With a bang, he came into contact with the fifth kiln. He stuck himself tightly onto it, and a rarely seen expression of pain appeared on his face. However, he kept his hands fixed tightly on the kiln, not loosening his grip in the slightest.

The fifth kiln was so great that the yellow-browed man looked incredibly insignificant before it. As Su Ming charged forth and approached the kiln, it continued growing bigger and bigger in his field of vision. Right then, he saw that there was a faint crack near the yellow-browed man.

The second to approach the kiln was Reverend Zi Long. His body turned into a purple long arc, and when he closed in on the kiln with a bang like a purple dragon, he fixed his right hand on the kiln. The spot which he approached was also the edge of the crack.

At the instant he touched the kiln, sizzling sounds could be heard. Clearly, the heat of the kiln made even Zi Long frown. His expression of pain might not be as evident as that of the yellow-browed man, but it was clear that he was enduring something painful. He knew the level of difficulty in this, and so did the yellow-browed man.

They were followed by the white-robed teenager, Zhu You Cai, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor. The three of them approached the kiln almost at the same time. The place they approached was similarly part of the crack. When Su Ming looked over, he could see all of them fixing their hands tightly on the kiln, next to the crack, but they did not do much after that, as if waiting.

Su Ming was the final person to approach the place. When he closed in on the fifth kiln, he lifted his right hand and seized the crack to the side of the kiln's walls. At the instant he did so, he sensed a powerful wave of heat surge through his right hand into his body with a bang.

Once the black horse brought Su Ming to the fifth kiln, the two dragon heads immediately opened their mouths and bit down on the kiln with their teeth. Like human fingers, they took hold of the kiln.

Almost at the instant Su Ming arrived, a powerful tremor shook the fifth kiln. Su Ming felt the heat of the kiln rise up. Almost in the blink of an eye, he reached the limit of what his current body could endure, but it was also the moment that the black flames of destruction erupted with loud bangs from within the crack.

The flames of destruction spread out from the kiln. At that moment, Su Ming saw endless cracks on the fifth kiln. Those flames came out from them and swept through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean.

At the instant the black flames of destruction erupted forth, the yellow-browed man let out a low roar and let go, then lifted his hands to provide protection in front of himself. With large strides, he brought forth a wave of impact that shook the surrounding air, and with a single move, he rushed inside the crack through which the black flames were gushing forth.

Once he rushed in, the black flames of destruction instantly submerged him, but it could be seen that there was a gigantic ball of fire that was charging forth with an incredibly speed within them.

The yellow-browed man was naturally in that ball of fire. The two yellow dragons around him were rotating swiftly, forming a tight defense and allowing him to rush into the distance. He disappeared without a trace.

Reverend Zi Long flew up almost at the same time. With an expressionless face, he released his grip on the kiln. He then turned into a dragon to charge forward, allowing himself to be devoured by the black flames. Yet those flames could not make him falter for even a single moment. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared into the black flames.

There was no sky and earth in the fifth kiln. There was only a platform that was about ten thousand feet tall. This platform was made of bronze, and there was an incredibly great heat spreading out from it. Everywhere around the platform was endless space

that was filled with a boundless sea of fire tumbling about. It exuded an incredibly dense heat. The flames there would sometimes be red, sometimes blue, at other times purple, and once in a while black. There were even times when these flames mixed together to form a multi-colored sea of fire.

As it tumbled about, some flames suddenly seethed and let out booming sounds. The yellow-browed man rushed out from the sea of fire. His entire body was like a burning ball of fire. When he landed on the platform, he stomped his feet, and the flames on his body were immediately extinguished.

Only then did he let out a sigh of relief. He lowered his head and looked at his body, noticing that the corners of his sleeves had turned into ashes. His expression immediately turned slightly sour. When he raised his head, an expression of lingering fear appeared briefly on his face.

'The flames of destruction are so powerful. I've only been here for a small amount of time, and they've already burned my sleeves. If I remain for a while longer, even my life might be in danger.

'It's a pity that the period of time when the purple flames disappear and the black flames erupt is the moment when the barrier is at its weakest, or else it would have been great if I could have stepped in when the flames were purple.' The man shook his head. When he sighed, the sea of fire above him suddenly tumbled furiously once more, and a purple figure rushed out.

That purple figure was so quick that it instantly landed on the platform. When the flames were extinguished, the long arc turned into Reverend Zi Long. There were a few strands of his hair that had turned into ashes and scattered into the air the moment he stepped on the platform.

The yellow-browed man looked at Zi Long, and Zi Long looked back at him. Their gazes met for a moment before they both averted them. Yet even so, they had once again made a general guess towards the other's level of cultivation.

"Fellow Daoist Zi Long, I am Huang Mei. I've heard of your great name a long time ago. Now that I met you today, it's just as the rumors say, your power is extraordinary. You are already half a step away from Fate Realm." The yellow-browed man let out a loud bark of laughter, then wrapped his fist in his palm towards Reverend Zi Long.

"Fellow Daoist Huang Mei, you have a similarly great reputation in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Even if I am from the galaxy beyond this place, I've also heard about your liking for the bodies of Ancestral Spirits. Compared to me who is half a step away from Fate Realm, you might already be close to attaining completion of Mastery Realm," Zi Long said faintly. When he turned his body towards Huang Mei, he swept his gaze across the gourd behind his back in a seemingly casual manner, then wrapped his fist in his palm to return the greeting.

"Haha! Fellow Daoist Zi Long, you are too polite. I wonder what sort of treasure are you aiming for by coming here this time?" Huang Mei asked while smiling.

"I don't have anything that I am set on getting. I'll just leave it to chance. I'm more curious at the moment about who will be the third person who will step out of the black flames," Zi Long said while lifting his head to look at the sea of fire above him.

Huang Mei's expression remained calm. When he looked towards the flames above his head, he asked with a smile, "Oh? Fellow Daoist Zi Long, would you like to make a bet?"

"What's the bet?" Zi Long averted his gaze and looked at Huang Mei. His previous words were precisely so that he could bring up the issue of a gamble. The both of them were scheming and farsighted people. They were both slightly wary of each other and needed to find a solution to resolve the effect and threat the other would bring.

Almighties who had reached their level always found it best to not attack if they could choose to not attack.

"Let's make the bet on one-time abnegation!" Huang Mei immediately said.

"The person who loses will have to choose to give up on a piece of treasure the winner wants, hmm? Very well!" Zi Long nodded.

"Alright, then I will choose first. I choose... Flame Fiends' Progenitor! I wonder who you will choose, Fellow Daoist Zi Long? Is it Sir Wu?" A glint appeared in Huang Mei's eyes while he spoke with a smile.

Reverend Zi Long fell into a period of contemplative silence before he suddenly said, "I will choose... the cultivator riding that black horse."

Huang Mei's gaze focused. He did not expect that he would choose the person on the black horse. In his eyes, that man was the weakest among them. The black horse of his was slightly strange, but from his previous performance, he was still the weakest among them.

"Alright, then let's see who among the people we chose will be the third to show up." Huang Mei pondered it over for a moment, then lifted his head and looked at the sea of fire in space. With a glint in his eyes, he started waiting.

Within the sea of fire in the fifth kiln were Zhu You Cai and Flame Fiends' Progenitor. At that moment, both of them were charging forward. The power of the black flames was incredibly terrifying. Even if the both of them were Almighties and old Flame Fiend identified himself as the Emperor of Flames, he still felt a powerful sense of danger.

This pushed them to be even faster. Next to them was the teenager in white. His body had already changed. While he retained the upper half of the human, the lower half of his body had become that of a centipede, and he was so quick that his speed was on equal grounds with that of Zhu You Cai and the Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

Behind them was Su Ming sitting cross-legged on the Resentful Wei's body. With a will screaming to destroy all lives, the black flames burned in all directions. The Resentful Wei could withstand it, but Su Ming's heart faced the fear from Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu.

The black flames would cause people to feel as if they were placed in the kiln of the universe. Their whole bodies would burn in their minds. And in fact, even their cultivation bases would seem to melt in these flames.

Su Ming's hair was burning. The brows of the body he controlled had already turned into ashes. In fact, he even had a feeling that the body he controlled was about to melt.

"Since the four of you dared to place your ambitions on the fifth kiln, then hurry up and bring out the methods you've hidden for this purpose!" Su Ming immediately ordered them by sending his thought to their minds. Since Xuan Shang and his group had been planning for this for years, it was impossible for them to not have prepared anything.

Chapter 981 Su...

Su Ming was naturally not so considerate as to do all the work himself and let others enjoy the benefits.

Xuan Shang and his group might not be the main souls, but under the black flame, all of the pain the body suffered would be divided by everyone inside. Because of that, the four of them would sense the pain incredibly well. That pain of their bodies and cultivation bases burning prevented the four of them from having any room to refuse Su Ming's order.

A moment later, Su Ming lifted his right hand while sitting cross-legged on the Resentful Wei and struck his own body. With it, a black medicinal core appeared on his palm.

This medicinal core was not something to be consumed, but was a Fire Warding Core!

It was made of many precious materials and was something created only after Xuan Shang and his group had spent many years in collecting the materials required for it. Su Ming immediately crushed the core before flinging it away.

With it, the flames before him started letting out loud booms, and during them, the flames' temperature was reduced slightly.

At the instant this happened, the Resentful Wei let out a roar, and its speed increased exponentially. As Su Ming circulated his cultivation base, he resisted the burns brought by the black flames.

His hair and eyebrows had already disappeared, and there were many signs of destruction on his body. Even if it was formed by the supreme treasure, it could not last for long under the destructive flames.

Besides, the faster a person traveled through the sea of fire, the worse the burns way suffered, but if they did not travel quickly and remained in place for a time, it would also become progressively worse for them. In fact, once the black flames erupted in a greater magnitude, then not only would the person be unable to step into the fifth kiln, even their life would be threatened.

As Su Ming moved forward and the body showed even more signs of falling apart, he sent another thought to the group. "One isn't enough! Bring them all out!"

Xuan Shang hesitated for a moment before saying, "But-but if we use up all of them, how are we supposed to rush out of the sea of fire when we want to go back?"

"If we can't even get in, then why even mention returning?" Su Ming did not slow down. Zhu You Cai, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and the white-robed teenager had already widened the distance between him and them.

While speaking, Su Ming struck his body with his right hand again. This time, five Fire Warding Cores appeared. Once he crushed all of them and swung the powder forward, the temperature of the flames in front of him were instantly reduced for a moment. His speed increased endlessly, and in an instant, he covered a lot of ground.

Within a moment, he was already side by side with the white-robed teenager, who was the last among the three. The white-robed teenager looked at Su Ming, and a flash of surprise appeared on his face. He did not expect that Su Ming would be able to catch up.

"I don't have anymore! There were only six!" Xuan Shang immediately sent this thought forward with anxiety in his voice. Clearly, even if he did not tell the truth, he would only have at most about one or two of those cores left.

Su Ming did not pressure him too much. He did not speak, but as a brilliant sparkle shone in his eyes, a resolute look appeared on his face. He could not stay for much longer in the sea of fire, or else his body created by the supreme treasure would shatter.

"Resentful Wei, move at full speed, don't bother about me!"

Once he sent this thought to the black horse, all six of the Resentful Wei's eyes shone at the same time, and they let out a roar together. This roar caused the expression of

the white-robed teenager to change, and even Zhu You Cai and Flame Fiends' Progenitor were not unaffected. At that instant, the black horse's speed increased without comparison right before their eyes.

As it rushed forward, it surpassed the white-robed teenager in the blink of an eye and then passed Zhu You Cai and Flame Fiends' Progenitor. As for Su Ming, a feeling of being burned instantly drowned all of his senses. With it, intense pain shot through him. That pain of being burned was immediately split into six parts. Once it was shared equally among all, the Resentful Wei beneath Su Ming became faster again.

Su Ming knew that the others could maintain the average speed to move forward through the black flames, but he could not, because the other people's bodies were real and were formed by their cultivation bases, but his body was formed by a supreme treasure. Since it was bound to be damaged, then between the injuries he would suffer by rushing out of the sea of fire at full strength and the injuries he would have to bear by moving forward at uniform speed, he would choose the former!

As he was rushing out, his body burned and dried up, but the Resentful Wei beneath him was like a bolt of lightning that surpassed the white-robed teenager, Zhu You Cai, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Once it did so, the Resentful Wei crashed straight into an invisible barrier hidden in the flames.

With a bang, a powerful rebound shot out of the invisible barrier. That rebound attacked Su Ming's body and was immediately shared between him and the other five. At that moment, he activated Ecang's presence in his body and even summoned his Ecang clone to fuse together with him, making the body's power reach its absolute peak. Once the Resentful Wei crashed into the barrier again, a loud bang that shook the sea of fire around them spread out, and the invisible barrier shattered swiftly. The Resentful Wei rushed out!

Right behind him was Zhu You Cai, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and the white-robed teenager, but they also had to face the invisible barrier. That barrier closed up incredibly quickly, and unless they acted at the same time, then in the span of a few breaths, it would close up and heal. Those behind would then still have to face the barrier's obstruction.

As booming sounds echoed from the barrier, the Resentful Wei jumped out, and Su Ming's body shot out of the sea of fire. He appeared in the area above the platform.

He saw Huang Mei and Zi Long and noticed that their gazes were focused completely on him at that moment. He also saw a vague smile at the corners of Zi Long's lips as well as the crease between Huang Mei's brows.

Su Ming did not have time to think about it too much. Once he rushed out, he immediately descended on the platform. The Resentful Wei looked the same as usual, but a large amount of burns had appeared on the body Su Ming controlled. He sucked

in a deep breath, closed his eyes, and circulated his cultivation base. At the same time, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu sighed and relaxed from the highly-strung state they were in previously. They started making the best use of their time by repairing their own bodies.

Xu Hui might not have said a single word since the start, but in truth, the worry in her heart was naturally much greater than that of Xuan Shang and his group. When she saw that Su Ming was well, her mind was set at ease, and she started circulating her cultivation base to heal herself.

Because of it, the body Su Ming controlled, which was originally in an incredibly pathetic state, started healing rapidly before Huang Mei and Zi Long's eyes. The flames on the body disappeared, the burn marks faded away, and with just a few breaths, most of the body was already healed.

However, Su Ming knew that this was just what was shown on the surface. In truth, the body formed by the supreme treasure had suffered some damage that could not be healed. He did not know for how long it could continue maintaining this form, but clearly, it would not be for too long.

This item had been created by a Sublime Paragon. If it was not for this supreme treasure, even with his Ecang clone, it would have been difficult for Su Ming to last for so long in the black flames. Besides, he was not fast enough, which would have made it difficult for him to enter the fifth kiln. Unless, of course, his Ecang clone had become stronger. Then perhaps he would have been able to do it.

He might have taken advantage of his current situation and added the Resentful Wei's speed into the mix to be able to enter, but even if he was taking advantage of his circumstances, as long as he could enter the fifth kiln, it was all that mattered!

When Su Ming opened his eyes, he saw Reverend Zi Long nodding towards him with a faint smile. As for the yellow-browed man, he let out a cold snort, but did not say a single thing.

A barely noticeable glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. These two people's attitudes towards him had changed, and it was clearly different from how they regarded him when they were outside. There had to be reasons he did not know behind this.

As he thought about it, intense bangs shot out from the sea of fire above him. They rang out one after another, and several bangs later, Flame Fiends' Progenitor became the first to rush out. Behind him was Zhu You Cai, and the last was the white-robed teenager.

When these three people landed on the platform, they lifted their heads to look at the sea of fire above them. There was lingering fear in their gazes. The three of them

looked incredibly pathetic. Clearly, even with their levels of cultivation, the journey through the destructive flames had been incredibly strenuous.

Once these three people looked at the sea of fire above them, all of them looked at Su Ming at the same time. There was a grave look on their faces, along with a hint of surprise. This was the first time they truly acknowledged Su Ming's existence. They had previously made a few vague guesses in their heads, but in truth, they did not pay too much attention to him. They only thought that all those who could come to this place would not be too weak.

Yet once they experienced the trial just then, Su Ming used his actions to show that he had the right to be regarded with importance by these three people.

"You are a Flame Fiend, but you didn't manage to arrive before us. Instead, you let a cultivator get ahead of you!" Huang Mei cast Flame Fiends' Progenitor a look before he sighed.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor rolled his eyes before narrowing them. A fierce glare shone in them, but he did not say anything.

'They were gambling just now!' Su Ming's expression was calm, but a thought had formed in his mind.

'Yellow eyebrows chose Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and Reverend Zi Long... chose me!'

Su Ming swept his gaze across them. When he looked towards Reverend Zi Long, a hint of surprise appeared in the man's eyes. However, it quickly turned into praise and he nodded. Clearly, he had managed to tell what Su Ming was thinking based on his gaze, and he knew that Su Ming had managed to guess what had happened.

Su Ming's heart stilled and he once again felt that while these people's appearances varied, all of them were farsighted and scheming people. The yellow-browed man's words might have made him seem as if he was grumbling just then, but in truth, it was a form of sowing discord between them.

The white-robed teenager cast a profound look at Su Ming before walking next to Reverend Zi Long. He lifted his right hand and swung it forward. Immediately, the space distorted, and the catwoman's figure manifested from within. Her face was still as apathetic as ever. The white-robed teenager moved towards her and bit down on her neck to begin sucking her blood. Several breaths later, he lifted his head. There was still blood at the corners of his lips, but the injuries on his body had healed slightly during that short moment.

He then put away the catwoman. Once he sat down cross-legged, he closed his eyes and began meditating. Zhu You Cai chose to meditate a bit farther away as well. As for

Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he crouched down on Zhu You Cai's body. Occasionally, he would look towards Su Ming, and a ferocious smile would appear on his lips.

"Alright, we'll rest here for several days. When the black flames in the world outside have finished erupting and the flames in the kiln disperse, we'll be able to enter the kiln," the yellow-browed man said calmly, sat down by the side, picked up his gourd, and began drinking.

Reverend Zi Long's expression became indifferent once again. When he sat down, he closed his eyes. The area instantly became quiet, and as the sea of fire tumbled beyond the platform, the lingering echoes of the booming sounds from the flames occasionally reached their ears.

"Su..."

At the instant Su Ming closed his eyes, he heard an indistinct voice hidden in the booms ringing in the space around him.

That voice drifted about and echoed in the area.

At the instant that voice spoke, all the people opened their eyes.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 982 Enter the Kiln - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 982 Enter the Kiln

Chapter 982 Enter the Kiln

"What sound is that?!" The yellow-browed man frowned and stared at the tumbling sea of fire around him coldly. That sound had entered their minds and was reverberating nonstop at the moment.

"Su..." the white-robed man that was the centipede with one thousand feet said faintly, and a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor narrowed his eyes while remaining crouched on Zhu You Cai's body. No one knew what sort of thoughts were in his mind.

Zhu You Cai shuddered lightly. He lowered his head and hid away the hint of complicated emotions that appeared on his face when that voice spoke.

"It is rumored that the master of the fifth kiln is called Su Xuan Yi. This person came from the Fifth True World, and it is said that he ventured out with his wife in the past. From then on, he has never been seen again. Could this voice be the kiln calling out to

its master?" the yellow-browed wondered aloud after contemplating it for a moment. When he spoke, he looked towards Reverend Zi Long.

Zi Long remained as calm as ever. He looked at the sea of fire in space and did not say a single word.

No one in the area noticed that Su Ming had also lowered his head at that moment. His eyes were shut, and he looked as if he was meditating, but in truth, he was hiding the hint of grief in his eyes.

'Even they know about Su Xuan Yi. Looks like the words of Dust Burners' Progenitor were real.' After a moment, the vague voice echoed in the area once more.

That single word that the voice spoke lingered for a long time and did not disappear, as if it was truly calling out to its master. There was a deep, ancient air within it, causing those who heard it to be unable to help themselves but to find their hearts growing heavy.

Soon after, the people resumed immersing themselves in exercising their breathing and waited for the sea of fire in space to disperse. They simply allowed that indistinct voice to occasionally ring in their minds.

Su Ming closed his eyes, but his right hand had moved to his storage bag. There was a jade slip on his palm, and its contents appeared in Su Ming's mind.

The Resentful Wei stood proudly beside him and looked at the area and the people indifferently. It regarded all manner of lives with hostility, and even if Su Ming had already formed an agreement with it, it still found itself to not really be able to get used to it. However, it could sense that Su Ming truly valued it.

Most importantly, it sensed a similar loneliness and grief within Su Ming.

With the Resentful Wei around, Su Ming could be at ease and immerse himself within observing the map in his mind. It had been given to him by Dust Burners' Progenitor, and within it was a rather detailed description of the fifth kiln.

Inside it, there were ninety-nine balls of fire, and they were the reason why the fifth kiln was known as a kiln!

Each ball of fire contained a supreme treasure, and when all ninety-nine of them were gathered together, they would form the vast power possessed by the fifth kiln.

Over the course of countless years of the fifth kiln being activated continuously and an endless stream of people entering it in hopes of obtaining a serendipity, some people managed to truly obtain a supreme treasure. They extinguished the fire and took away the treasure.

Because of that, the fifth kiln gradually lost its power to move about and could only stay in a single spot in the galaxy. When all of its supreme treasures were taken away, it would dissolve and disappear.

As of then, not even Dust Burners knew how many balls of fire were still within the fifth kiln, how many supreme treasures were yet to be taken away.

Su Ming knew that the Almightyies beside him were aiming for the supreme treasures contained within the balls of fire that still remained.

Besides these ninety-nine balls of fire, there were nine hundred and ninety-nine complementary treasures. They formed the structure connecting the ninety-nine supreme treasures, and not even a single one could be missing.

Over the years, these complementary treasures were the ones who were most commonly taken away.

The ninety-nine balls of fire formed ninety-nine big dimensions within the kiln, while the nine hundred and ninety-nine complementary treasures formed nine hundred and ninety-nine small dimensions. Even if the balls of fire were extinguished and the supreme treasure within them taken away, their dimensions would still exist.

Each dimension was a world, and there were ferocious beasts within them to protect the treasure. These ferocious spirits varied in strength, and it was often based on the might of the treasure itself.

A cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm might be able to win against the spirit protecting an ordinary complementary treasure and obtain it, but if there was an incredibly powerful complementary treasure, the ferocious spirits within its dimension would also be stronger.

If the treasure in the dimension was taken away, the dimension would remain, and so the ferocious spirits within it would also continue to exist. On top of that, because they had lost their treasure, they would become even more ruthless. They would not stop until they killed all lifeforms that entered their dimension!

It was even more so for the beasts defending the supreme treasures. The balls of fire in the dimensions with supreme treasures could not be extinguished by those who were not in Mastery Realm or Fate Realm. Furthermore, these supreme treasures were categorized in different levels. Based on the information Su Ming obtained from Dust Burners' Progenitor, nine of the ninety-nine supreme treasures were in the core of the fifth kiln.

The level of difficulty in obtaining these nine supreme treasures surpassed all of the others. It was related to a person's level of cultivation, chance, and also serendipity.

Dust Burners had a record of them, and they knew through a unique method of theirs that many years ago, when the kiln was activated, there were nine people who had stepped into a dimension.

It was difficult for people to take even an inch forward there, but they saw a sight which drove them mad. There was a prime flame in the sky of the dimension. This meant that this was one of the ninety-nine dimensions with a supreme treasure, but this was just secondary in importance. The most important thing was that there was a blade contained within the ball of fire that the nine people saw!

At the instant they took note of this, the blade's voice reached their minds, telling them that its name was Life Envyng Blade.

A supreme treasure that would tell its own name to others was one of the nine treasures within the core of the fifth kiln - a supreme treasure which would come to them only by luck!

It was that blade that caused all of the nine people to die in the end, and among the nine, seven of them were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death. These seven people had come from the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed to keep watch over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It was also due to the deaths of these seven people that the four Great True Worlds gave up on their plan to occupy the Divine Essence Star Ocean in one go, which they had been preparing for at that time. Instead, they simply decided to keep watch over it.

It could be seen from this alone that the nine supreme treasures in the core contained incredible temptation and power. When Su Ming saw this, questions rose in his heart.

Why did Su Xuan Yi not take the fifth kiln with him when he ventured out in the past? If he had taken it, then perhaps he would not have suffered such a tragic fate in True Morning Dao World.

Su Ming could not understand this. It caused him to be momentarily silent before continued to read through the introductions in the map in regards to the fifth kiln.

There were lifeforms existing in the space between the many dimensions in the fifth kiln, and they were known as Fire Spirits.

They were created by Abyss Builders and given the task of refining the supreme treasures as well as protecting the kiln. Over the course of countless years, intelligence was born within some of them and they chose to leave to become Dust Burners.

However, the price for leaving was the loss of the powerful offensive power they possessed as Fire Spirits. There were quite a large number of Fire Spirits who chose freedom despite that, but many chose to stay even if intelligence had been born within them. Instead, they continued carrying out their mission within the fifth kiln.

There were also plenty of Fire Spirits who did not possess intelligence and just drifted in a daze between the dimensions of the fifth kiln. They killed all lifeforms which did not belong to the place and maintained the normal operations of the fifth kiln.

Time slowly passed as Su Ming investigated the information regarding the fifth kiln. When the seventh day of the black flames of destruction erupting passed, the heinous sea of fire that had lasted for nearly a month within Divine Essence Star Ocean disappeared in an instant.

Not a single flame could be seen any longer. Only ruins were left behind, as well as worlds that no longer had any traces of green within them. Far too many planets were reduced to ashes by the sea of fire, and far too many floating continents had disappeared along with it. None of them would exist in Divine Essence Star Ocean any longer.

There were also far too many ferocious beasts who had died in the sea of fire. The ones remaining would exist in a period of emptiness within Divine Essence Star Ocean, but even so, the hidden forces would remain strong. If powerful ferocious beasts and various races could survive here, then they naturally find ways to avoid the sea of fire until they even got used to the eruptions from the fifth kiln.

Their existences were the foundation of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

When the sea of fire in the world outside disappeared, the flames that existed in space in the area around the group on the platform started dimming one by one. Yet as they became dimmer, all the people, including Su Ming, instantly saw... figures that had their eyes closed and were sleeping in the extinguished flames,

They... were Fire Spirits!

When the sea of fire from the fifth kiln erupted, they fell asleep, but when it disappeared, they would gradually wake up and carry out their mission - to kill all those who did not belong in this place.

At the instant Huang Mei and Reverend Zi Long saw the Fire Spirits, their faces turned grim. They did not say a single word, because there were far too many Fire Spirits around. They were so densely packed together that their numbers could not be counted.

They might be sleeping, but the mighty pressure spreading out from their bodies was enough to make all people's skin crawl. These Fire Spirits' levels of cultivation varied, but even the weakest among them were at Lunar Kalpa Realm!

The strongest among them were existences akin to Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death. However, they had not reached that Realm and were just exuding the mighty pressure and offensive power that belonged to those in that Realm.

Thankfully... most of them did not possess intelligence.

However, it could be seen that some of their eyelids were shuddering, as if they were about to wake up, and it gave a sense of oppression to people.

"Fellow Daoists, if you could come to this place, then you must surely have your own understanding regarding the fifth kiln. There are six of us here, if all goes well, we can occupy six Spirit Trudging Platforms. At that time... heh heh," The yellow-browed man lifted his head to look at the Fire Spirits.

Right at the instant he finished speaking, nine huge light screens appeared around the platform on which they stood. At the instant light shone from them, piercing roars reverberated through the kiln. Those shrill cries came from the Fire Spirits who had opened their eyes from their deep slumber and let out that sound once they saw the six intruders.

Chapter 983 Splitting Up

Once the continuous string of shrill sounds traveled outwards, the Fire Spirits who had awakened rushed towards the platform at an incredible speed.

Due to the noise, even more Fire Spirits woke up, and their piercing screeches shook the entire kiln for a time. It sounded as if it would not stop until all of the intruders were killed.

While they screeching, they rushed to the platform. The hot wave that came with them swiftly rose to an apprehensive degree.

At that moment, the yellow-browed man rushed into one of the light screens. He was so quick that he disappeared in an instant. Reverend Zi Long reacted at almost the same time and stepped into another light screen, disappearing.

As for the white-robed teenager, Zhu You Cai, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor, they spread out and rushed towards different light screens. Flame Fiends' Progenitor cast Su Ming a seemingly casual glance on his way. A glint flashed past his eyes, and an unknown thought formed in his heart.

However, plenty of Fire Spirits were coming towards them at that moment, and he did not have much time to think about it. He could only move towards the closest light screen, and in an instant, he stepped into it.

Su Ming moved swiftly as well. With one step, he landed on the Resentful Wei. Its speed surpassed Su Ming's own, which was why borrowing the Resentful Wei's power at that moment was the best choice.

The Resentful Wei could sense the mighty pressure brought by the shrill voices from the space above it. With a single move, it charged towards another light screen like a bolt of lightning.

Su Ming did not know whether it was just a figment of his imagination, but before he stepped onto the Resentful Wei, the Fire Spirits seemed to be surging towards them from all directions. Their shrill voices echoed in his ears, but they did not seem to be focusing on him. Yet when he got onto the Resentful Wei, they immediately charged towards them.

Su Ming did not have time to think too much into it. With its extreme speed, the Resentful Wei rushed into the light screen and the two of them disappeared.

On the platform, a large number of Fire Spirits rushed into all of the light screens that the intruders had entered. The moment they did so, the nine light screens around the platform started revolving, and booming sounds rang out in the air. The light shining from them reached one hundred thousand feet. This sort of revolving motion made it seem as if the fifth kiln was in operation.

.....

The instant Su Ming walked out of the light screen, he had his Atman spread out to sweep the area. The Resentful Wei beneath him did not stop and immediately galloped forward.

Above them was a blue sky. The ground was filled with green, and everything seemed to be at peace, as if there was nothing dangerous in the place. Even if Su Ming spread his Atman outwards, he did not notice any dangers.

However, he did not relax his guard in the slightest bit. This was one of the many dimensions within the fifth kiln, so it was impossible for there to be no dangers in this place.

As he rushed forward, a myriad of thoughts passed through his mind. Su Ming knew what was the Spirit Trudging Platform that the yellow-browed man had mentioned. The platform the group stood upon before was one of those things.

There was an introduction to these Spirit Trudging Platforms in the jade slip that Dust Burners' Progenitor had given Su Ming. That item was originally not named as such, and it was only coined with this name by those who came to the kiln later on. Gradually, as time passed, most people came to know it by this name.

Knowledge about its true use had long disappeared in the passage of history. Perhaps Dust Burners knew about it, but it was not mentioned in the jade slip. As of then, the platforms were useful due to their locations, which was why they were incredibly important to all the people who challenged the fifth kiln.

If anyone divided the myriad of dimensions in the fifth kiln into an inner and outer layer, then they could treat the kiln as a gigantic sphere. The countless dimensions were scattered all over the place. There were primary and complementary dimensions, and there were three borders dividing the inner and outer layers. These three borders were formed by many platforms that formed a ring, and it divided the entire fifth kiln into four regions.

It did not mean that the dimension with the supreme treasures would definitely be located in the innermost layer, but the innermost regions would definitely have dimensions with supreme treasures.

The yellow-browed man was clearly talking about the first border just now. The meaning behind his words was that if all of them were successful in their journey, they would gather there and step into the dimensions of the fifth kiln between the second and third borders.

The fifth stone which Su Ming wanted was located in the deepest depths of the kiln, which meant that it would only appear in the inner layer of the third border. This fifth stone's role was to suppress certain things in the fifth kiln!

It existed to suppress some powerful supreme treasures!

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. As the Resentful Wei charged forward, he continued spreading his Atman outwards and searching for the exit. The world's area was not very big, so he could tell that this was one of the dimensions with a complementary treasure, but there was no light from a treasure in the sky. Clearly... the complementary treasure in this place had already been taken away many years ago by someone else.

These sorts of places were the most dangerous. It would have been better had the treasure still been around. As long as a person was not dead set on obtaining the treasure, then the ferocious spirits in the place would most often not take the initiative to attack.

However, in places where the treasure had been taken away a long time ago, the ferocious beasts would kill all those who came to the dimension.

Su Ming was alert. When he moved forward, he did not forget to observe the area behind him. In just about a dozen breaths, his expression changed swiftly. He noticed that three Fire Spirits had rushed into the region he was Relocated, and they were chasing after him.

He frowned. These three Fire Spirits were not especially powerful. Two among them possessed offensive power comparable to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, while the final one was slightly weaker. It only possessed a mighty pressure that was equivalent to those in Lunar Kalpa Realm.

Compared to them, Su Ming was more concerned about what sort of ferocious spirits existed in this seemingly peaceful world. The most important thing for him to do right then was not to chase away the Fire Spirits behind him, but to leave this dimension as quickly as possible.

His eyes sparkled. The Resentful Wei beneath Su Ming could notice his thoughts. It became even faster, and Su Ming sent out a divine thought to Xuan Shang and his group, who were still excited about being able to enter the fifth kiln. He also sent one to Xu Hui.

Soon, the divine senses from Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, and Xu Hui gathered on Su Ming's body, and under his control, they spread outwards swiftly, then in the blink of an eye, the entire land was enveloped in their divine senses.

'Where is it?!' Su Ming's eyes focused, and he immediately noticed a faint distortion in the space in a region in the distance. That distortion looked ripples on a calm surface of water. Clearly, there was some form of Relocation force there.

'It's just as Dust Burners' Progenitor said. If there is an entrance to a dimension, then there will definitely be an exit. This is an unchanging law that will last forever...'

The Resentful Wei beneath Su Ming became even faster and turned into a long arc that could not be seen clearly. In an instant, it disappeared. When it reappeared, it was already beside the distorted region. Just as it was about to step in, Su Ming's pupils suddenly shrank.

'Something's not right. This dimension is a little too simple...'

Without any hesitation, Su Ming stopped. He lifted his right hand, sending out a wisp of Yun You's divine sense. This was his ability as the main soul, and Yun You could not refuse it.

That divine sense disappeared into the distorted region, but soon, Su Ming's expression changed. He heard a pained scream from Yun You echoing in his mind.

His divine sense had been devoured.

Su Ming immediately moved back, but the instant he did so, he saw violent ripples coming out from the distorted region, and it turned into a gaping mouth. Ghastly black rays of light were revealed within, and the mouth open wide to devour Su Ming in one gulp.

At the same time, about a dozen distortions suddenly appeared in the originally empty space around him. A dozen something gaping mouths like the first one took shape, and with a foul gust of wind as well as low growls, they charged towards Su Ming.

The blue sky became murky in an instant as well. A gigantic crack that was enough to terrify all appeared above. If anyone looked over, they would immediately see that this was not a crack, but an incomparably huge, ghastly, gaping mouth!

With the Resentful Wei's speed, it disappeared into the distance in an instant and avoided being devoured by the dozen something gaping mouths. However, the hose could not avoid the ghastly mouth formed in the sky. It charged towards them from above and below.

When Su Ming looked over, it was as if the entire sky was descending on him. It looked as if the mouth wanted to gobble up the land.

His expression turned dark. By then, he had already seen the ferocious spirits' appearance. These were semi-transparent ferocious beasts that looked like tadpoles. They were not big, but their skulls were several hundreds of times bigger than their bodies. When they opened their mouths, it was an alarming sight.

There might only be around a dozen of them around, but each of them exuded the offensive power of those in Solar Kalpa Realm, and a wave of madness and resentment also came from them, especially the ferocious beast which replaced the sky. The mighty pressure spreading out from it was the presence that belonged to Almighty in Mastery Realm.

The dozen something ferocious spirits were in front of Su Ming while above him was the gaping mouth that filled the sky. Behind him were the three Fire Spirits, charging swiftly towards him. These three Fire Spirits did not have intelligence. In their eyes were a great killing intent, so it seemed... that only the ground was safe.

Su Ming looked at the ground, and a cold sneer appeared on the corners of his lips. The safer a place appeared, the higher the possibility that it was the most dangerous. This was something that could be seen by what had happened moments ago.

He stopped in midair, then closed his eyes and soon opened them again. Ecang's presence erupted from him. Once it filled the supreme treasure's body, a brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He did not retreat, but moved forward, and took a step towards the dozen something ferocious spirits in front of him.

He lifted his right hand and swiftly struck the area in front of him.

At the instant his palm landed, the sun, moon, and stars shone in Su Ming's eyes. His palm swiftly turned into a gigantic illusion in front of him. That illusion was enlarged rapidly and turned into a palm that was several thousands of feet big. With loud bangs, it collided with the ferocious spirits, and booming sounds surged up into the sky. From the distance, it could be seen that these ferocious spirits were swatted backwards, and a path for Su Ming was cleared.

He moved. As the Resentful Wei, Su Ming left its back and rushed towards the incoming gaping mouth which brought up a torrential wave as it came from the sky. At the same moment, the Resentful Wei lifted its head, stared at the mouth in the sky, and let out a shocking roar.

Once it roared, infinite black flames instantly erupted from its hooves. Endless resentment was contained in those flames, and they filled the place in all directions, forming a gigantic black ball of fire that swept up the Resentful Wei and charged towards the gaping mouth in the sky.

Su Ming and the Resentful Wei rushed forward from two directions. In just the span of a few breaths, they crashed into the gaping mouth one after another. Booming sounds and roars reverberated in the air, and the entire sky tumbled backwards. The gigantic ferocious spirit was clearly not an opponent when Su Ming and the Resentful Wei worked together. As it retreated continuously, the true sky was revealed!

It was fragmented, with countless cracks in it. Su Ming's eyes sparkled, and without any hesitation, he charged towards one of the cracks with a long whistle. The Resentful Wei was even faster. As it charged forward, it met up with Su Ming, then in the blink of an eye, rushed into a crack and disappeared without a trace.

Chapter 984 Located in the Origin of Heaven

The clouds and smoke swam forth swiftly before Su Ming's eyes, as if a thousand years were going past. It only lasted for an instant, but the length of that instant seemed to be continuously lengthened, which would cause most people to be at a loss at what to do.

It lasted only for the blink of an eye, but that action itself seemed to carry fatigue, and it brought with it the powerlessness of struggling against the passage of time.

This was what Su Ming felt once he walked out of the crack in the sky from the first dimension.

The body of the supreme treasure might seem to not have changed much, but within it, Su Ming, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, and even Xu Hui found their minds in a state of chaos. Xu Hui was in a slightly better condition, but Xuan Shang and his group were hit by a clear, heavy fatigue.

"I lost about a hundred years of my life..."

"It's the same for me..."

"I lost nearly one hundred and fifty years..." The voices from Xuan Shang and his group echoed in Su Ming's mind.

Su Ming's fatigue was even greater, because he was the main soul. The life force he lost was about three hundred years.

If he added the years of life they lost together, it would amount to a total of one thousand years.

Every single time they moved through a dimension, one thousand years of life would be taken away from them. This was... something the jade slip from Dust Burners' Progenitor had not mentioned. Su Ming stayed silent. Xuan Shang and his group remained silent as well.

"Thankfully, those one thousand years of life were divided among us. This is also our strength. We can move even further than others, so why did you fall silent?" Xu Hui's voice traveled faintly into the group's minds.

"Since we're already here, there's nothing we can't afford to lose. Now, even more so, we cannot split up, or else each of us will have to bear the burden of having one thousand years of life flowing out from us. With just a few times, we might end up dying in the fifth kiln."

"No wonder those old monsters who could clearly withstand fire did not come, and only the Almighty who are Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death stepped into the fifth kiln. The main reason might be because the loss of life force every single time they move through dimensions."

"That's right, even if we are in the later stage of World Plane Realm, Fellow Daoist Xu is in Lunar Kalpa Realm, and even if you are in Solar Kalpa Realm, senior, there is still a limit to our life force. We aren't like the Almighty who are Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death and have nearly eternal life. They can afford the loss." Sighs filled with various emotions from the group traveled into Su Ming's mind. A barely noticeable glint shone briefly in his eyes.

He knew that even Almighty who were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death would not have eternal lifespans. They would eventually have their health fall into decline, and the loss of life force would cause this period of decline to arrive quicker.

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes as he asked faintly, "Then where... did the life force that was absorbed by the fifth kiln go?"

After he asked this question, the voices of the people in his mind instantly fell silent. All of them began pondering.

'We waste our life force when we move through the dimensions here. Do Dust Burners know about this... or do they not?'

Su Ming's eyes shone as he looked at the area around him. He was clearly in another dimension at that moment. The sky in this place was gray and dull, as if there was endless dust in it. The land was not silent, with occasional howls ringing in the air.

Those howls were like shrill wails, so anyone who heard them might be shocked, but compared to the tranquility in the previous dimension, Su Ming liked this place more. Being able to see and hear was better than not being able to see and hear.

He did not immediately act rashly, but instead started thinking.

'It's highly impossible that they did not know about this... Only Dust Burners can activate the fifth kiln, so why... do they do it once in a while?' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes again. He had a vague feeling that he caught onto some form of clue.

'Judging from an analysis based on what I've seen so far, Dust Burners use the activation of the fifth kiln to help the Fire Spirits who possess intelligence to choose whether they want to leave or stay. This is method to increase the number of their people besides newborns.

'Dust Burners' Progenitor might not have told me this in a straightforward manner, but the underlying meaning is clearly this. It's the first reason a person would think of when they ponder about this.

'But... there might be other reasons behind it!' The glare in Su Ming's eyes became sharper.

'Could it be that the fifth kiln is in truth a trap?!' Su Ming's pupils shrank when this thought surfaced in his mind.

'Dust Burners intentionally activate the kiln once in a while. With the supreme treasures as well as the complementary treasures, they attract powerful warriors to the fifth kiln, and while the powerful warriors move through the dimensions, they have their life force continuously sucked away. But the temptation of the treasures make them persist in continuing onwards even if their life force continues to flow away.

'Then, if I am right about this, why do Dust Burners do this? Where does the life force the people lose go?!' Su Ming's breathing quickened slightly.

'There are still two questions to this. Did Dust Burners set this trap for their own needs... or did someone else ask them to do it?!' Su Ming sensed the veils of mystery surrounding the fifth kiln. At that moment, he was peeling off those veils layer by layer, about to reveal the truth.

'If it is the race's needs, then it's much simpler. It would simply be because they want to become the masters of the fifth kiln and make their own race stronger... but if it isn't

because of their personal needs and actually because someone told them to do so, then there is a great secret contained within this!

'If there is someone controlling them, then besides Su Xuan Yi, who else could it be?!' A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. A thought that even he thought was impossible formed in his head again.

'Could it be... that Su Xuan Yi hasn't died?!' Su Ming's expression was incredibly complicated. Once this thought took shape in his head, it refused to leave and disappear. It lingered in his mind until it was deeply ingrained there.

'If he... If he hasn't died, then where is he? Could he be in the fifth kiln?' Su Ming remained silent. After a long while, a lost look appeared in his eyes, and he sighed softly.

There was melancholy contained in that sigh, along with an emotion that even he could not identify well.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, then forced down those complicated feelings in his heart. He looked at the area around him, then sat down on the Resentful Wei's back. The two dragon-headed horse quietly moved forward, then turned into a long arc and galloped into the distance.

Su Ming spread his Atman outwards to search for the exit in the area. With that one scan, he saw a mountain in front of him. At the center of that mountain was a cave.

The air in the cave distorted, as if there were some cracks in there. Waves of aura that did not belong to this place spread out from those cracks, making it obvious that this was the exit out of this dimension.

However, with his experience in the previous dimension, Su Ming did not immediately move there. Instead, he observed the area carefully and saw several living beings that were half the size of an average man.

Their appearances were indistinct, for surrounding them. They drifted over the ground in a daze, as if they were searching for something. They did not seem to notice Su Ming's Atman at all, and continued drifting about mindlessly.

After observing them for a moment, Su Ming narrowed his eyes. The Resentful Wei beneath him rushed forward and disappeared from the spot to appear beside the mountain. Based on what he did previously, Su Ming sent out one of the divine senses from Xuan Shang's group. Once it fused into the mountain cave, it did not disappear. In fact, based on what he could sense in his mind, Su Ming saw the exit to the place through the distortions in the mountain cave. The power of time that absorbed life force was also contained there.

A resolute look appeared in Su Ming's eyes. The Resentful Wei beneath him rushed forward again. This time, it charged towards the mountain cave, but right at the instant Su Ming entered it, a muffled voice echoed in the world in an indistinct manner.

"Su..."

Once it spoke, Su Ming's mind immediately shuddered. This voice might be echoing in the world outside, but it managed to surge up into the depths of his heart. The drifting indistinct figures stopped at once, lifted their heads to look at the sky collectively, and let out roars that surged into the sky.

Their roars connected and turned into waves of sound that resulted in a single word, "Su..."

Soon after, a powerful call rose in Su Ming's mind. He could clearly sense that there seemed to be a will that was unfamiliar yet familiar summoning him through countless dimensions, as if it had noticed him.

As this call spread through his body, a shudder ran through the bald crane while it was within the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled. It was as if that voice had a strange power over it, causing a cold look to immediately appear in its eyes, though there was also a look of struggle within them as well.

While that sound spread out, the Resentful Wei beneath Su Ming paused for a moment, then instantly charged forward again. In the blink of an eye, it rushed into the distortions in the mountain cave and disappeared without a trace.

Another one thousand years flowed away from everyone's bodies. Soon after, the third dimension appeared in front of Su Ming's eyes. At that time, an ancient air surrounded the body of the supreme treasure he controlled. The people in the body were swathed in fatigue, once again havin felt the terror of having their life force flow away as they moved through the dimensions.

"Su..."

Almost the moment Su Ming walked out, the voice that brought an unfamiliar yet familiar feeling to him spoke in his head again. That voice seemed to have traveled through time and was slowly closing in on him at that moment.

Before Su Ming could do anything else, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, and Xu Hui's expressions changed, because at that moment, all of them noticed the drastic change in the bald crane and heard its shrill scream of pain.

"Go away! GO AWAY! You are you, and I am me! We aren't one!"

"You are me, and I am you. You were created to fulfill the mission..."

"I am not. I am the bald crane. I like crystals, I..."

"You are not. You are Kong Mo. You are the Kong Mo from Saint Defier's camp. You forgot your mission! Wake up, Kong Mo! Kill the person behind that voice who confused your mind. Kill him, use his blood to dye your soul red. Awaken... to my existence, which lies in the depths of your memories!"

"Get lost! I'm not Kong Mo! I'm Su Ming's bald crane!"

"I have been injured thrice badly, and your will was split up from mine. You should not exist... You, who exist in the Origin of Heaven and within Dark Dawn's ballad will forever and ever belong to Saint Defier's camp..."

Chapter 985 The Tree's Ancestor

"Su..."

When that unfamiliar yet familiar voice spoke again, it had intended to only call out to Su Ming, and there was a feeling within that call that Su Ming could not describe. He could sense... that there was not a single hint of ill will in that voice towards him.

Instead, it radiated warmth that caused Su Ming's heart to tremble. That warmth gave him a feeling that he had been searching for it for a long time, and he wanted to keep it forever by his side.

However, Su Ming did not expect that the voice would cause such a drastic change in the bald crane, and it was to a degree that Su Ming had never seen before. It had never happened before.

The two voices belonged to the bald crane, both of them being spoken by it. Yet while one of them sounded like the bald crane Su Ming was used to, the other had a wild tone and gave off a cold and arrogant feeling of those who considered themselves superior to others. It was completely different from the bald crane Su Ming was familiar with, even though their voices were the same.

Kong Mo. This was not the first time Su Ming had heard of this name. He knew that a long time ago the bald crane had been known as Kong Mo! This was before it had lost its memories.

When he heard the words the bald crane shouted, which sounded as if there were two wills within the bald crane's body fighting for supremacy, a loud bang suddenly erupted in his mind, especially when he heard the voice mentioning Saint Defier's camp.

He understood what was going on in an instant, as if a diaphragm had been torn apart!

He understood why Ecang's will had called the bald crane a traitor in the past with an enraged roar when it saw it. He also understood that Old Man Extermination did not belong to the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. Instead, he belonged to one of the camps from the 180 Expanse Cosmoes in Dark Dawn.

He could already imagine it. An unknown amount of years ago, Old Man Extermination sat on an ancient ship and came to the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. Over there, he created a ballad. Within it were nine living beings and four races, to whom he granted eternal life.

Within that ballad was Ecang... and also the bald crane!

However, perhaps not even Old Man Extermination had managed see through the bald crane's real identity. It did not belong to the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. It was Kong Mo, and it belonged to one of the camps in the 180 Expanse Cosmoes of Saint Defier!

Hence, Ecang called him a traitor. Perhaps... Old Man Extermination's death and plenty of other deeper secrets... came from it being a traitor!

'Origin of Heaven... Is the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos known as the Origin of Heaven? Because this is an Expanse Cosmos, the camps from Dark Dawn and Saint Defier were fighting for it. If Dark Dawn had one Expanse Cosmos less, then Saint Defier could launch a preemptive strike, or vice versa. Whoever took control of the Origin of Heaven first... could wage war first!

'That's why to snatch the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, Dark Dawn and Saint Defier both executed their own methods. Dark Dawn's camp sent Old Man Extermination, and Saint Defier's camp created Kong Mo!

'From this, it can be seen that neither Dark Dawn nor Saint Defier could take the initiative to attack the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. There had to be some sort of prohibition behind this!

'Also, the disappearance of Ancient Wei, one of the three Great Ancient Kingdoms... There has to be... some connection between them!'

Su Ming's heart roared. Everything about this had only existed as scattered hints in his mind, but now, with the bald crane's changes and the two will's fight, Su Ming came to an understanding!

'Kong Mo became the traitor in Ecang's eyes. Over the course of countless years, Kong Mo was severely injured thrice, to the point it lost its physical body. Even its memories were scattered, but it did not die. It's just as Kong Mo said, the bald crane should not have appeared... It's just that Kong Mo's will had fallen into deep sleep, so the bald crane's will was born.

'The bald crane doesn't have a mission. It is obsessed over crystals. It is sleazy and shameless... but it's my companion!

'And I obtained a fragment from the Seed of Life Extermination. I activated its legacy, and based on this... it can be seen that I am Old Man Extermination's substitute. I... became part of Dark Dawn's camp, and I became an emissary in the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!

'Then... Xiao Hong gave me the Seed of Life Extermination's fragment in the past. Was Xiao Hong truly a Fire Ape, or...' Su Ming's breathing quickened. His trip into the fifth kiln this time gave him too much to think about.

'There's also Berserkers' supreme treasure, the Barren Cauldron. I once suspected that the Seed of Life Extermination's fragment was a fragment from the Barren Cauldron, but now, I'm thrown off again. Just what sort of secret is contained here? What sort of existence is Yin Death Region? What sort of connection is there between the Barren Cauldron and the Seed of Life Extermination? And what sort of connection does it have with Dao Chen? After all, that Barren Cauldron once belonged to Dao Chen.'

Various thoughts fled instantly past Su Ming's mind.

He understood many things, but as he understood them, many other thoughts formed in his head. As they became mixed together, it looked as if they turned into a gigantic net in front of his eyes, woven so tightly that it covered the truth.

"Su..."

When that voice spoke again, the struggle on the bald crane's expression became even more prominent. Killing intent and madness appeared in its eyes. A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. The Resentful Wei beneath him rushed forward. Su Ming could not even spare a single glance at the area around him. He knew that Kong Mo's awakening was definitely caused by some connection to the voice that reached their ears.

The voice had incited Kong Mo's killing intent in the bald crane's body, and because of the stimulation from it, Kong Mo began to show signs of awakening. It intended to destroy the bald crane and once again become Kong Mo.

It was difficult for others to help in this. The key lay in whether the bald crane could fight back. At the moment, the best thing to do was to leave the voice behind so that Kong Mo would fall asleep once more.

Su Ming could not make the voice disappear, but after he moved between dimensions, it had clearly become weaker. It could be seen that if they continued moving farther in, the voice would become increasingly weaker, until it disappeared. Perhaps it would reach them again later on, but they would still have bought the bald crane some time.

The Resentful Wei was so quick that it covered an incredible distance in an instant. With its natural instinct and Su Ming's Atman, it immediately found the exit and shot through it. They moved between dimensions time and again, rushing through all of them.

During this, they ran into several worlds filled with ferocious spirits. However, under Su Ming and the Resentful Wei's cooperation, who both did not have the heart to fight against the spirits there, they passed through some twenty dimensions after experiencing several dangerous situations. Only then did the voice completely disappear.

At that moment, the bald crane started to slowly calm down. Fatigue appeared on its face, and it fell into unconsciousness.

Su Ming let out a sigh of relief in his heart. Not a single treasure could be found in the previous twenty something dimensions. All of them had already been taken away many years ago. Once the bald crane passed out and Su Ming left the dimension to appear in another one, his pupils suddenly shrank.

This was a world whose sky was filled with green light and which was clearly a different world from the ones which possessed a blue sky. The ground was filled with plants, and it could be seen that there was a tree that was about several thousands of feet tall in the land in the distance.

Above the crown of the tree... a blade of grass floated. It had three leaves. They shone with a green light, and because of that, the whole world was dyed green.

'Complementary treasure!'

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. This dimension was not big. Based on its area, it could be seen that this was not a land with a supreme treasure. This was still a normal dimension, but the treasure here had yet to be taken away.

Xuan Shang and the others immediately saw the difference in this place and turned solemn. When they looked towards the floating green grass above the tree in the distance, greed appeared in their hearts.

Even if it was just a complementary treasure, a treasure that could exist in the fifth kiln definitely had some aspects about it that were extraordinary. Based on the grass' ability of changing the sky's color, it was definitely nothing ordinary.

Su Ming observed his surroundings carefully and did not act recklessly. Dimensions with treasures would definitely have plenty of ferocious spirits to protect them, but when Su Ming scanned the entire area with his Atman, he did not notice a single shadow.

He frowned, then sent a thought to the Resentful Wei. The black horse immediately approached the tree. As it continued getting closer to it, Su Ming's heart shuddered when they were around one thousand feet away from the tree.

Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu's hearts shuddered as well. Even Xu Hui immediately became stern and serious.

Su Ming saw four people sitting cross-legged under the big tree!

They were four cultivators, and those Su Ming had never seen before. These four people had not died. They sat there, and their chests rose and fell. In fact, their eyes were wide open as they stared at the tree, unmoving.

There were dazed expressions on their faces, along with a look of struggle. There was also an indescribable, bizarre air about them. It was unknown... how many years they had been sitting there.

Their robes were in tatters, and their faces were pale. From the mighty pressure spreading out from their bodies, it was clear that the three cultivators were in Solar Kalpa Realm, while the other one was clearly a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

It was because of this scene that Su Ming stopped moving.

"Progenitor Long Hai!" There was a hint of disbelief contained in Xu Hui's voice. "That Almighty Master of Fate, Lives, and Death is Progenitor Long Hai from True Morning Dao World. He was stationed to keep watch over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Ten thousand years ago, he stepped into the fifth kiln and never returned. His soul point shattered, so he was verified to have died!

"But... but now, with how he looks, he's actually alive!" Xu Hui immediately sent her thought to the others, and her voice echoed in everyone's minds.

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. When he observed the area again, he became certain that there were no ferocious spirits in the area... besides the tree that was one thousand feet tall!

If there were no ferocious spirits in this place, then based on the statement that there was definitely something protecting the treasures, the tree... was the ferocious spirit here!

It was also this tree that trapped the three old monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm and Progenitor Long Hai!

'A tree...' The corners of Su Ming's lips suddenly curled up into a cold sneer.

'The Ecang body I possess is also a big tree, and it is the ancestor of all trees!'

At the instant a brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes, he suddenly turned his head to look at the space behind him. Great distortions appeared in the spot from which Su Ming had stepped into the dimension.

'Finally, someone has stepped into the same dimension as me...'

Su Ming narrowed his eyes. He moved and landed on the ground. The body of the supreme treasure changed as well, and he had it fuse into the surroundings. When he hid himself, the space in the distance distorted, and a hunchbacked old man walked out.

It was Flame Fiends' Progenitor!

Chapter 986 Waiting for a Chance

The old man was thin and shriveled. His head was slightly big, and he had several locks of hair trailing down from it. There was red in his eyes, and there was also a fierce glare shining in them. Once he appeared, he sprawled down on the ground and did not move.

Only after a moment did he get up and look around himself carefully. He stared at the blade of grass with three leaves on the one thousand feet tall tree, and a brilliant glint shone in his eyes.

He moved, and in an instant, he appeared nearby. He lifted his right hand, then swiftly seized the ground. Immediately, his fingers sank into the earth. When he closed his eyes, Su Ming felt a light shudder traveling through the ground.

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. The supreme body he controlled at that moment had blended with the area around him. He was confident that he would not be found so easily. After all, this treasure was created by a Sublime Paragon. It was not something that could be seen through by a normal Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

After a moment, when the tremors in the ground became weaker then completely subsided, Flame Fiends' Progenitor lifted his fingers from the ground. After licking his lips, he moved and instantly appeared beside the one thousand feet tall tree. He shifted his gaze from the blade of grass with three leaves above the tree's crown to the four people sitting and meditating below.

The spot in which Su Ming hid allowed him to see Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He noticed that when the old man swept his gaze past the four people, he placed his attention on Long Hai. The old man licked his lips, and a hint of greed appeared in his eyes.

"What a great body that has been nourished for ten thousand years by the spirit of the tree. The value of this body is even greater than the flower above it," Flame Fiends' Progenitor mumbled to himself softly.

"Especially since their souls and their cultivation bases are still around!" The eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor grew brighter. He closed in on the cultivators, but the moment he approached them, the one thousand feet tall tree suddenly swayed.

The world immediately roared. The sky turned from light green to dark green. The change was especially prominent on the ground, which filled with endless blades of grass. At the instant they sprung up, they charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor, as if they wanted to surround him and wrap him up like strands of hair.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor grinned. The moment he was surrounded by those blades of grass, he stretched his arms out, and immediately, a purple sea of fire erupted from his thin and shriveled body. The sea of fire instantly spread out, and once it crashed into the incoming blades of grass, violent booms rang out.

It stirred up a wave of impact that swept outwards. Su Ming remained still not too far away, watching the actions of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He saw the old man rush to one of the cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm right when the purple flames from his body crashed into the grass.

The Solar Kalpa Realm cultivator had his shoulder seized by Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and in a flash, Flame Fiends' Progenitor bit into his neck. With one vicious suck, the cultivator's body started trembling violently, a telling sign that he was in intense pain, but his expression remained numb, and his eyes were still dazed.

His body started withering away right before their eyes. After a moment, he was reduced to only skin and bones. A large amount of black spots also appeared on his body. These black spots spread out rapidly, and judging by the looks of it, he was not rotting away. Instead, it seemed like a brand left on him after fire had eroded his body. All of this happened in the span of a few breaths. When Flame Fiends' Progenitor lifted his head from the Solar Kalpa Realm cultivator's neck, blood still trickled down the corners of his lips, and there was excitement as well as an expression of being revitalized on his face.

As for that cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm, his entire body was covered in black spots. It had turned black like charcoal. When Flame Fiends' Progenitor swung his right hand, the cultivator turned into powder.

At that moment, the one thousand feet tall tree seemed to have become angry. It swayed again, and quite a large number of tree leaves fell off to turn into talismans. They shone with a dense, green light and charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The eyes of the old man sparkled. He rushed to another cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm, and almost at the same time he closed in on him, the talismans reached him. Flame Fiends' Progenitor lifted his right hand and pushed his palm straight at them.

Loud bangs shot up in the world. A gigantic palm appeared in front of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. It charged towards those talismans, and at the instant they crashed into each other, booming sounds reverberated in the air. Flame Fiends' Progenitor used that time to reach another Solar Kalpa Realm cultivator. This time, he did not bite down on his neck. Instead, at the instant he closed in, he seized the cultivator's chest with his left hand, and what Su Ming saw caused his pupils to shrink.

He saw with his own eyes that the chest of Flame Fiends' Progenitor tore itself open. It was like a gaping mouth that was filled with flames. With this appearance, he pounced on that cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm. From the distance, it was as if he was using that mouth on his chest to devour that cultivator.

With just one bite, the head was devoured, and with another bite, the whole body disappeared from the spot. The cultivator was completely eaten by Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

It was difficult to imagine the thin and shriveled Flame Fiends' Progenitor to be able to swallow a cultivator whose body was much bigger than his, but it was what had happened. As Su Ming's eyes sparkled, he watched Flame Fiends' Progenitor fighting against the tree. After a moment of hesitation, he decided to give up on attacking.

'If this tree was only this powerful, it'd have been impossible for it to trap an Almighty like Progenitor Long Hai. Judging by the looks of it, the tree has yet to execute its full strength...

'Then the reason why it did this...' Su Ming's eyes focused and he cast Flame Fiends' Progenitor a glance. Clearly, if he could think about this, it was impossible that the old man did not guess it as well.

'That's why he chose those three cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm.'

The one thousand feet tall tree swayed furiously. A large amount of leaves fell off, and as they floated down, they turned into talismans to charge towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who laughed loudly and moved. He did not bother himself with the arrival of those talismans and pounced on the last remaining cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm.

The talismans were so quick that they touched the old man's body the moment he pounced on the last Solar Kalpa Realm cultivator. As booming sounds rose in the air again, the last of the trio died in Flame Fiends' Progenitor's mouth.

As for the old man, he swayed and was forced back a few steps, but a cold glare appeared in his eyes.

At that moment, a pair of eyes suddenly appeared on the tree's trunk. Those eyes were yellow. They shone with a merciless light and were staring at the Flame Fiend coldly.

"Are you done eating them?"

A loud, buzzing sound came from the tree and echoed in the world, turning into booms which sounded like thunder. They swept through the land in all directions.

"I'd have to thank you for intentionally letting me devour those three cultivators. Now, I just lack one more," Flame Fiends' Progenitor said in a ghastly manner while laughing and licking his lips. His body shook with his mirth, and it filled him with a bizarre air.

When Su Ming heard this, he did not move. In fact, even his eyes remained still. Everything was just as he had guessed previously. The tree was the only ferocious spirit in this land. Everything just then might have made the situation seem intense, but in truth, it was just for show. The tree had intentionally let Flame Fiends' Progenitor devour the three cultivators.

With it, it could make the blood and essence of Flame Fiends' Progenitor become even more robust, and it could turn him into a puppet like Long Hai.

"I lack a member of an alien race like you under me. Stay." As the tree spoke with a buzzing sound, Progenitor Long Hai's eyes opened. A sharp and fierce glare appeared in his eyes, and at the same time, he stood up slowly. His body started floating.

It could be seen clearly that branches which had crawled out from the ground had fused into Long Hai's feet, making him look like a puppet which was held up by strings.

The moment the tree finished speaking, Long Hai's eyes shone. He lifted his right hand, and the shadow of a green dragon appeared on his palm. That green dragon threw its head back and roared, then rushed towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor. At the same time, Long Hai flew forward as well.

The one thousand feet tall tree swayed, and cracking sounds rang out. One thousand leaves fell off and turned into one thousand talismans. Then, another thousand leaves went down. When they did, they began burning on their own. As they did so, there was no smoke, but a thick wave of resentment rose up

When it spread out, another thousand leaves drifted down. They turned into human faces that belonged to all sorts of living beings. Piercing roars reverberated in the air, and the three thousand leaves rushed towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"I am the ancestor of all trees. I have existed since the world was created. These three thousand leaves and the three thousand Great Daos in the world. You... how dare you still not submit to me?!" That buzzing sound was like thunder. The three thousand leaves turned into a gigantic battle axe in midair and swung down at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

When he saw this, a hint of surprise appeared on his face. He sensed the mighty pressure of those in Mastery Realm from the tree, but if it could trap an Almighty in Mastery Realm, so it was clearly impossible for it to be weak.

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor saw the attacks, his pupils contracted, but not a single hint of fear could be detected on him. Instead, he grinned. Without even looking at the incoming Long Hai and the axe formed by the three thousand tree leaves, he pushed his hands against the ground.

After that, he lifted his head and let out a shrill roar towards the sky. A purple sea of fire that surged into the sky instantly erupted from the Flame Fiend's body and rushed down into the ground through his arms.

"So what if you can trap an Almighty in Mastery Realm? If you were a person, I might be wary of you, but you are a tree, and trees... are dependent on the ground. I will burn the ground which serves as your foundation and turn this world into nothingness. I'd like to see how exactly you will make things hard for me when your foundation is gone!" As the Flame Fiend shouted, the ground burned, and a dense sea of fire filled the entire world.

While the ground burned, it started disappearing swiftly. The layers in the sky turned into nothingness. Flame Fiends' Progenitor's flames were his Origin Flames. He was a life form different from Dust Burners, but like them he had emerged from flames as well.

In the blink of an eye, the earth turned into ashes and disappeared. The sky was devoured by emptiness. Within an instant, there was no longer a sky or earth in the world, only a tree that was one thousand feet tall floating around.

The tree had countless roots. Due to the lack of soil, they all started twisting.

Chapter 987 Now

Progenitor Long Hai's green dragon rushed out from the flames and closed in on the Flame Fiends' Progenitor in the blink of an eye. As the old man laughed ferociously, he lifted his right hand and struck the center of his brows. When he opened his mouth, he coughed up a mouthful of fresh black blood.

It seemed to contain the power of searing heat as well as some sort of strange life. It charged towards the green dragon, and the instant they collided, no bangs shot up. Instead, the black blood seemed to have fused into the green dragon's body. Countless lumps appeared on its skin. Those lumps burst and turned into human faces with black patches. Those faces matched one of the three cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm whom Flame Fiends' Progenitor devoured just then. They spread out and filled the entire body of the green dragon, reducing it to ashes.

"You're just a tree that no longer has a foundation. How dare you fight against me?!"

As the Flame Fiend laughed ferociously, he looked as if he was about to rush over, but right in front of him, the battle axe formed by three thousand leaves closed in with a bang. Once it swung down, Flame Fiends' Progenitor did not bother dodging, but instead opened his mouth wide and coughed up a mouthful of blood again. That black blood burned in midair and turned into another human face.

That person was also one of the three cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm. At that moment, with a ferocious expression, he charged at the battle axe formed by the three thousand leaves. With a loud bang, the human face shattered, but the battle axe also shattered with it.

For a time, Flame Fiends' Progenitor enjoyed unlimited splendor. His tactic was incredibly successful. He first pretended to have fallen for the tree's plan and devoured the three cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm, but in truth, he did not fuse with them. Instead, he gathered the power in their bodies and turned it into his own power.

Then, he burned the ground and the sky in one go. Su Ming remembered Flame Fiends' Progenitor previously seizing the ground with his right hand, and perhaps this was the reason why he could burn the entire world so quickly.

Clearly, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had started making preparations right from the start, and even Su Ming had to be wary of him. He had not been able to see through the old man's actions.

With the act of instantly burning the world, the Flame Fiend destroyed the tree's foundation in one go. Because of it, he seized the upper hand in the battle.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor had only spent a short amount of time thinking about it and had already brought it to action, causing all of this to happen. Based on this, it could be seen that those who had become Almighties were so calculative and intelligent, so quick with their schemes, that it was not something an ordinary person could think match.

If things continued progressing in this manner, then there was an incredibly high chance that Flame Fiends' Progenitor would obtain the treasure in this place and even devour Long Hai. If that was the case, Su Ming would not choose to walk out. He would choose to wait. If no opportunity presented itself for him to attack, then he would have no problems with giving up on the treasure.

As the three thousand leaves shattered, Flame Fiends' Progenitor laughed ferociously and charged towards the tree. He was so quick that he was just about to close in when his pupils suddenly shrank, because he saw no panic or anger in the eyes on the tree's trunk... Instead, there was scorn!

It was the contempt of those who regarded others as below them, a derision mocking Flame Fiends' Progenitor for overestimating himself. It was the omen that caused the old man's expression to change and his heart to let out a loud thump.

"You aren't the first person to do this. In the past, the cultivator named Long Hai also wanted to use this method to kill me... He nearly succeeded, but after him, no one can succeed." A buzzing sound reverberated in the air from within the tree.

"All lives possess fate. This fate is most intriguing and cannot be touched by all except those who have mastered fate..." A voice filled with an ancient air came from the tree. At the instant its words echoed in the air, a strange power seemed to have entered the world.

That power and the words immediately caused Flame Fiends' Progenitor's eyes to go wide. An expression of disbelief appeared on his face, and a wave of terror that he could not hide revealed itself on his face.

"Fate Realm! You're in Fate Realm! Could this not be a dimension with a complementary treasure but a dimension with a supreme treasure?!"

The expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed drastically. Based on his understanding, even the strongest ferocious spirits in the dimensions with complementary treasures were only in Mastery Realm. Only the ferocious spirits in the dimensions with supreme treasures might be powerful beings in Fate Realm.

But everything before his eyes at that moment was something that could not have been known beforehand. Just the difference of one single Realm could make all his previous actions turn into a joke.

Su Ming's heart also shuddered, but his eyes shone swiftly. The Almighty in Fate Realm he understood the most was Heaven Traversers' Progenitor. That person relied on a treasure to move himself to half a step away from Fate Realm.

As a barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, he cast a glance at the three-leafed grass floating above the tree, and a strong hint of desire appeared on his face.

'Unless the tree itself reached Fate Realm, then it must be... this treasure's effect! As for the tree's real level of cultivation... Well, it'll all depend on whether I can cut it with the Execution of Three Evils! If I can cut it, then it means that the treasure serves a critical role!'

Su Ming narrowed his eyes. His gaze landed on the currently rapidly fleeing Flame Fiends' Progenitor, waiting for a chance that would benefit him the most if he attacked.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor retreated swiftly. He knew that he had no chance of striking back with his power when he compared himself to the Almighties in Fate Realm. With

his heart in shock, he noticed the strange power contained in the world. This power surrounded him and had already interfered with his perception.

From what he knew, this power could only come from one source... Fate!

"The earth possesses fate, as do the heavens."

When the ancient voice spoke again, the ground that had vanished due to being burned returned. It buried the roots of the tree, and a green tint reappeared in the formerly empty sky. Everything returned to how it had been before.

"Thy fate shalt end!"

At the instant the face on the tree's trunk said those words in a cold voice, Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a shrill scream of pain. A large amount of fire suddenly erupted from his entire body. While purple flames surged and tumbled about in the area, the voice from the tree echoed once more.

"Fire is thine fate. This fate shalt be thenceforth devoured."

Once these words were spoken, the sea of fire immediately stopped spreading outwards. Instead, it tumbled backwards to burn the body of Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

An incredible expression of terror appeared on the Progenitor's face. As he swiftly retreated, he formed a seal with his hands and struck a few parts of his body. With each strike, he would cough up a mouthful of black blood and become faster.

"Thou shalt be mine second child. So shalt be thine fate."

When the voice from the tree reverberated in the air, Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a shrill scream of pain. His whole body shuddered. A power that he found difficult to resist surged at him from all directions in an invisible form. It crushed his body, causing him to be unable to move forward. Instead, his body was pulled backwards against his will.

He moved closer to the tree, and a blood-red branch crawled out of the trunk. It closed in on the old Flame Fiend as if it wanted to crawl into his body and turn him into a puppet like Long Hai.

The latter stood by the side with an apathetic expression. He had only released that green dragon and not done anything else. Clearly, the will of the tree believed that it needed to take action personally to deal with this Flame Fiend.

Su Ming was still waiting. He did not believe that Flame Fiends' Progenitor only had these methods at his disposal. If this was true, then even if Su Ming did not attack, he would definitely die.

But if Flame Fiends' Progenitor still had other methods at his disposal, then Su Ming would prepare to deal the finishing blow to him. After all, this person had already showed the intention to kill him due to the yellow-browed man's words. Su Ming could sense the killing intent, and he naturally did not feel any pity for the Progenitor.

When the time came, Su Ming was quite confident about himself being able to escape. This confidence came from the one thousand feet tall tree executing its power of controlling fate to create soil and bury its roots instead of killing the Flame Fiend.

This matter might seem small, but if the tree could control its own fate, then it would naturally not need its foundation. Just like Ecang, due to its existence as a superior life form, it could move about the galaxy without any need for soil to provide nourishment to it.

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor was oppressed by the invisible power around him, his body continuously approaching the tree, he saw the red branch close the distance to less than one thousand feet away from him.

A resolute look then appeared on his face. He gritted his teeth and lifted his right hand to strike the center of his brows again. This time, he did not cough up black blood, but a loud bang shot up from his body, and during that instant, he swelled up rapidly.

This was not him self-destructing. Instead, once his body swelled up, countless runic symbols appeared on his skin. These runic symbols were like tadpoles. Once they appeared, they started swimming about his body as if they were alive. A powerful presence immediately erupted from the Progenitor's body.

At the same time, beyond the fifth kiln and in the planet where Flame Fiends lived were an innumerable number of Flame Fiends shuddering. They coughed up blood as their bodies withered, and some of them immediately fell to the ground burning to ashes before leaving a puddle of blood. In a short while, most of the Flame Fiends died.

This was Flame Fiends' Progenitor activating the divine ability of his race. He had discreetly absorbed his people's lives in exchange for a moment when he could be at his strongest.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Intense bangs shook the world. Even if there was someone several dimensions away from the place, they would still have been able to hear it. At that moment, black blood gushed out of the Progenitor's body before everyone's eyes. That blood spread out ceaselessly and turned into a layer of black blood fog. It contained a powerful corrosive power that even corroded space. All forms of power, including the existence of fate, were halted in that blood fog before they were forcefully cut off.

The one thousand feet tall tree let out an enraged roar. The face on the trunk showed a refusal to accept what was going on, but the tree itself could not move. As the blood fog tumbled about, it blocked off its power of fate and even caused its connection with the puppet Long Hai to be cut off for a moment.

The tree could only watch helplessly as the Flame Fiend escaped.

Once Flame Fiends' Progenitor swelled up several hundreds of times his original size, he managed to free himself of the binds created by the power of fate around him. With a shrill scream and a heinous amount of resentment, he rushed forward.

His power was falling swiftly. This was the result of him having executed the previous divine ability. However, if he could escape from this place and find a spot where he could isolate himself to heal for a few days, he could recover.

However, right at the instant he escaped, killing intent appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

'Now!'

Chapter 988 A Puny Shoo

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes, and with one swift move, he came out of hiding. His appearance did not cause the one thousand feet tall tree any surprise. Clearly, it had noticed his presence before. After all, when Su Ming entered the dimension earlier, he had not hidden himself.

However, Flame Fiends' Progenitor did not expect that Su Ming was hiding in this place.

This was what it meant to get out of a frying pan and into the fire. Flame Fiends' Progenitor might have escaped, but his power was swiftly falling. At the instant he sensed the killing intent behind him, he saw Su Ming swiftly rushing towards him!

In just a flash, Su Ming caught up. This was not his own speed, but the Resentful Wei executing its extreme speed. At the instant they closed in, Su Ming lifted his right hand. The power of Ecang within him gathered, and he also took away Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu's power, who could do nothing about it. All these forces of power gathered on his palm, and he pushed it in the direction of Flame Fiends' Progenitor through the air.

The world roared. Su Ming's strike turned into a whirlwind that charged towards the Progenitor with a loud bang, and madness appeared in the old man's eyes. As he shouted, a fierce note manifested in his voice. When he saw that he was about to be swallowed up by the whirlwind, a look as if he was about to risk everything showed up on his face. He pressed his hands on his chest and tore it outwards.

With it... he tore his body into half. Half of him continued running, and the other rushed to Su Ming, then chose to self-destruct!

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was an Almighty in Mastery Realm, yet he was forced to an extent that he had to self-destruct. If this news went out, Su Ming's name would ring through the universe.

In truth, this was not all of his own doing. The main reason behind it was the existence of the one thousand feet tall tree. It had heavily injured the Flame Fiend beforehand, and with Su Ming's body formed by the supreme treasure as well as the Resentful Wei, he was able to do this.

However, if he had hidden for so long only to destroy half of Flame Fiends' Progenitor's body, then he Su Ming would end up with a huge threat to his future. There was no way he would be willing to accept this. Since he had already attacked, he would do his best to kill the other.

The self-destruction of half of the Progenitor's body caused a loud bang to surge into the sky. At the instant the destructive ripples spread out, a glint appeared in the Resentful Wei's eyes. The two dragon heads roared and rushed towards the ripples brought by the Progenitor's self-destruction.

A black sea of fire formed by resentment swept out in all directions and instantly swallowed up the impact formed by the Progenitor's self-destruction, making it so that it could not spread out. At the same time, Su Ming let out a long roar, and the full force of his power erupted from his body. He even called forth his Ecang clone, causing his combat power to reach its peak during that instant. With one step, he disappeared from the spot.

During the instant the explosive power was halted, Su Ming's foot landed on air, and he left the area of the explosion to appear behind Flame Fiends' Progenitor who now only had half his body and was already far into the distance. He had already found the exit and was about to enter it.

"Stay here!" Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. As he spoke, he lifted his right hand, then seized the air in the direction of Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who was just about to leave.

With it, the body of Flame Fiends' Progenitor trembled. When he whipped his head around, strong resentment and wariness appeared in his eyes as he looked at Su Ming. He knew that if he did not discard his body, then it would be impossible for him to leave this place on this day. Compared to his life, everything else was nothing.

Without any hesitation, Flame Fiends' Progenitor threw his head back and roared. A red spot appeared at the center of his brows. It went backwards and shot through the Progenitor's skull, then flew out of the back of his head. It showed up to be a red jade!

That jade only appeared for a moment before it turned into a semi-transparent shadow. Naturally, that shadow was in the image of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. This was clearly his Nascent Divinity!

His Nascent Divinity had left his body!

At that moment, the remaining half of his body exploded with a bang. This was Flame Fiends' Progenitor sparing no pains in having in getting injured to block Su Ming with the power of the self-destruction and at the same time having his Nascent Divinity borrow the impact from the explosion to be pushed into the exit.

This act of discarding the body and the resolution within caused Su Ming's pupils to shrink. As a booming sound surged into the sky, his right hand crashed into the explosion brought by the remaining half of the Progenitor's body.

Su Ming staggered a few steps back. When he lifted his head, he saw the Nascent Divinity's almost crumbling form disappear in the distortions which formed the exit of the dimension.

What welcomed him there was the loss of one thousand years while he was moving through the dimensions. He, who only had his Nascent Divinity left, would definitely be injured badly when those one thousand years flowed away. Since he no longer had a body and life force to be absorbed, then what would be absorbed would be the essence in his Nascent Divinity.

If he was lucky enough to survive this encounter, he would no longer be Flame Fiends' Progenitor of before, but would be incredibly weakened.

The gaps between the dimensions were endless and insubstantial, and they might not even lead into the same region. Because of it, the thought of chasing after the Progenitor only appeared briefly in Su Ming's mind before he gave up on it.

He swung his arm to wave away the smoke, and only then did he see a red beast skin pouch where the remainder of the Progenitor's body had self-destructed. He seized the air with his right hand, and the beast skin pouch immediately flew to him. Once Su Ming caught it, he turned his head around and looked at the tree and the Resentful Wei.

The explosion where the Resentful Wei was had already ended. The horse moved and appeared beside Su Ming. It looked slightly tired, but it was not injured.

At that moment, Su Ming stood beside the dimension's exit. It could be said that he had seized the initiative in his hand. Even if he wanted to leave, with just one step, he could do so.

He stared at the one thousand feet tall tree in the distance, and the tree was also staring at Su Ming through the gradually dissipating blood fog. By its side was Progenitor Long Hai.

At the instant Su Ming met the tree's stare and then averted his gaze to look at Progenitor Long Hai, a faint voice suddenly reaching his heart. That voice drifted about, and there was anxiety as well as a strong wave of desire in it.

"Fellow Daoist, save me! I am Long Hai, and I come from True Morning Dao World. My soul was seized by this devilish tree, and I lost myself... Now, with the blood fog Flame Fiends' Progenitor brought forth, the connection between me and the tree has been cut off temporarily, and I was able to regain my mind. Save me..."

"I, Long Hai, swear by my power as a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death that no matter whether you choose to save me or not, if I regain my freedom, then I will acknowledge you as my master. If I go against my oath, then my Nascent Divinity will scatter into the universe, and all generations of the Long Family will die!" As Long Hai said these words, a strange connection suddenly appeared in the depths of Su Ming's heart.

This connection was faint and indistinct, and it drifted about just like the voice.

"An oath from a person in Mastery Realm!" Xu Hui immediately said swiftly. Long Hai's voice, which had traveled into Su Ming's mind, had also been heard by Xu Hui, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu. Xu Hui clearly became agitated.

"This oath cannot be made easily. Not only did he swear it, he even activated the indistinct fate lingering all around us. It has already been branded in the universe and has turned into a promise!

"Progenitor Long Hai... what resolute courage!"

As Xu Hui spoke, Su Ming narrowed his eyes into slits. A brilliant light shone within them. It was just as Xu Hui said, this Progenitor Long Hai was indeed incredibly courageous. This was clearly a rare moment when he could be conscious, which was why he seized it, and without even waiting to see whether Su Ming would agree to his request, he handed Su Ming everything about himself and swore the oath.

This was him using the fastest time and the shortest amount of words necessary to show his greatest sincerity. He was clearly worried that Su Ming would not believe in his words and he would miss this opportunity, which was why... he decided to spare no pains and give up everything about himself!

Because of it, he could instantly obtain Su Ming's trust, causing his request for help to turn into a temptation. This temptation was the thought of having a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death serving as a guard from then on. It also caused the matter of saving

Long Hai to turn from being important to only Long Hai to become equally important to Su Ming.

The change in his thoughts, the appearance of these words, and the swearing of this oath made it clear that Progenitor Long Hai was indeed an Almighty in Mastery Realm. If it had been anyone else, they might have spent a long amount of time in obtaining each other's trust, and since this had nothing to do with Su Ming, there was a high possibility that he would have just turned around and left. Even if he attacked, he would feel as if he was doing it for someone else, so once any danger appeared, he would immediately give up.

But now, it was completely different.

Su Ming pondered over it quietly for a moment before a cold sneer appeared on his lips. He swiftly appeared beside the one thousand feet tall tree and took a step forward. Before he could close in, the one thousand feet tall tree swayed, and the eyes on the trunk stared at Su Ming with a dark light.

"You didn't choose to leave? Then stay."

Buzzing sounds reverberated in the air. The one thousand foot tall tree started swaying intensely, and numerous leaves floated into the air. There were three thousand of them, and they were gathering together to form a long sword. As they charged forward, they moved away from the disappearing blood fog and straight at Su Ming.

"These three thousand leaves signify the three thousand Great Daos. Within them are three thousand fates. This fate is too intriguing and mysterious for words, and this fate is how I, the ancestor of all trees, will bring about the rise and fall of fate!"

The buzzing from the one thousand feet tall tree reverberated in the air, and the long sword formed by the three thousand leaves immediately appeared in front of Su Ming as if it had sliced through space.

A piercingly cold glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"You are just an impostor who pretends to be in Fate Realm. How dare you say you're in the Realm of the Rise and Fall of Fate?!" Su Ming let out a cold snort. At the instant the long sword formed by leaves closed in on him, he lifted his right hand and slashed down with it.

The Execution of Three Evils!

The entire world looked as if it had been cut by a sharp blade before Su Ming. The slash landed on the incoming sword made of leaves. With a bang, a loud bang surged into the sky, and the sword formed by leaves crumbled.

The eyes on the tree focused, and at the same time, with a proud air as if he was looking down at the world, Su Ming's voice echoed in the world.

"You puny shoot, how dare you call yourself ancestor before me?!"

As Su Ming's words echoed in the air, the full force of Ecang's presence erupted from the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled, without a single hint of it being held back. The appearance of Ecang's presence swept up the sky, the air, and caused the world to look as if it had been overturned.

His presence was filled with an untamed, arrogant, domineering air, along with a madness that said he looked down on all lives, as well as an indescribable malice!

The tree's expression instantly changed drastically!

Chapter 989 He... Isn't Dead?

At that moment, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu, who were in the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled, felt shock in their hearts. They could vaguely sense a presence that suffocated them rising from Su Ming.

This presence caused them to feel that their hearts and minds had been greatly limited, as if ten thousand mountains had fallen on their heads, as if it had become difficult for even form any thoughts in their heads.

This was not the first time they sensed this. In truth, when the sea of fire had erupted beyond the fifth kiln and Su Ming was in the process of taming the Resentful Wei in the vortex in the world, they had sensed the same thing.

However, the feeling at that time was much more inferior to the one they felt now. At this moment, the madness, dominance, wildness, and the endless malice spreading out from Su Ming's body caused Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu's minds to tremble. Their souls were greatly suppressed.

In fact, they had a feeling in them that refused to disappear: If Su Ming wanted to destroy them, they would have no way of fighting back at all. They would be instantly devoured!

This was a form of powerlessness akin to them running into their mortal enemy, as if... they had become ants before Su Ming, and he was a universe that devoured ants to live!

The feeling Xu Hui had was slightly weaker than what Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu felt, but she was similarly shocked, but terror did not appear in her heart. Instead, there was only great wave of submission within her.

Submitting to a powerful warrior to the point that not a single desire to fight back could rise in her. This was the state of Xu Hui's heart at that moment.

However, only they, who were in the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled, could sense it. If there was anyone else in the dimension at that moment, they would see that Su Ming's hair was dancing while he stood in space, the presence and mighty pressure spreading out from his body forming endless distortions around him. Those distortions spread through the sky and earth, filling the entire dimension.

When all of this landed in the tree's eyes, it saw a whole different thing. It experienced shock and disbelief that it had never felt before.

In its eyes, in the endless distortions surrounding Su Ming was a gigantic shadow. This shadow was like a tree - a tree that brought with it pride, arrogance, and a madness as if it was proclaiming that it was above all in the universe.

As for the malice that filled the dimension, in the tree's eyes, it was endless branches that had no end. And during that moment, it was shocked to see the entire world replaced by that vast tree.

All of this caused the tree's body to shudder, all one thousand feet of it. It swayed about violently. A monstrously huge wave rose in its heart, as if a storm raged there. It caused its mind to almost break down from disbelief.

It had always believed that it was the ancestor of all trees in the universe. This was something it believed without a doubt, but in the depths of its heart, it knew that if there was a tree that could surpass it in the universe, it was an existence that it longed to become and it was...

The legendary, true ancestor of all trees... and also the only existence that could call it a shoot!

"Ecang!" The shocked voice from the one thousand feet tall tree instantly reverberated in all directions. Its body swayed, and the leaves on its crown drifted down as it watched the scene before itself in shock.

"You're just a tiny little shoot, how dare you call yourself the ancestor of trees before me?!" Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. He took a step forward, and with it, the world roared, and his presence pressed down on the tree with viciousness.

It was just a simple step, but to the one thousand feet tall tree, this was a vast tree that occupied the entire universe roaring at it. That roar brought forth a suppression to its soul, along with terror.

"How dare you act presumptuously?"

Su Ming took another step forward. When he raised his right hand, he slashed at the tree, and with it, the power of the Execution of Three Evils filled the air. When he cut down at the tree, the ground beneath the tree crumbled and was disassembled while shuddering, turning into nothingness.

This tree was formed by the tree's laws of fate, and if one slash from Su Ming's Execution of Three Evils could cut the fate of Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, there was no way the ground formed by the laws of fate by the small shoot would not crumble! His strike was the arch nemesis for all forms of fate that did not originate from a person.

"How dare you not worship me?!"

Su Ming took his third step forward. When he did so, he executed the third slash of the Execution of Three Evils, and the area around the one thousand feet tall shoot instantly turned into nothing. This was Su Ming cutting away all the laws of fate on the ground, causing it to be segregated from the dimension around it so that it could no longer use its ability that belonged to the Fate Realm.

With a bang, the one thousand feet tall tree shuddered, and almost all of its leaves fell. It also looked as if its whole body was about to explode. This was because it had its fate cut off, when Su Ming forcefully suppressed it!

This was not a suppression on its power. This was a suppression on its soul and its presence, based on a suppression from similar life forms—trees!

If it was any other cultivator, then only if their power was greater than this tree would they be able to use this method to suppress the tree. If they did not have a greater level of cultivation than the tree, they would definitely be unable to suppress it till it was trembling, even if they were at the same level of cultivation.

However, Su Ming was different. He was not suppressing the tree's power, but was using his Ecang clone's presence, life form status, and might as the ancestor of all trees, which would make all trees in the universe shudder and obey him.

Compared to Su Ming's Ecang clone, the one hundred thousand feet tall tree was just a small shoot!

As it trembled, Su Ming closed in on it with three steps, and the one hundred thousand feet tall tree gave up on all forms of resistance. It had to give up. All the laws of fate had already been cut off. The suppression on its soul caused it to be unable to struggle and

fight back, and the respect it harbored in its heart towards a legendary existence like Ecang caused its mind to almost break down.

It did not expect that it would run into the true ancestor of trees as well as the existence it longed the most to become—Ecang!

It was like a cat had thought itself to have become a tiger, but when it ran into a real tiger, it would lose all of its will to fight back due to the great shock.

"I, Treant Ta Luo, greet... Progenitor Ecang!"

All the leaves from the one thousand feet tall tree fell off. Only the three-leafed grass remained on the tree's crown. At the same time it shone with a green light, the branches from the one thousand feet tree twisted about and slanted downwards. A red branch also swiftly crawled out from the trunk. This branch stretched out, and a red leaf quickly grew on it. This could be said to be the highest form of worship for a Treant.

The fall of leaves symbolized the tree prostrating itself and showing complete submission. The trunk bending over symbolized an unparalleled respect, and that red branch that stretched out was the manifestation of the tree's soul. As for the red tree leaf that grew out of the branch... that was the true form of the tree's soul!

It brought its soul out, and it even lifted up the red leaf before Su Ming. From the distance, if anyone likened this tree to a person, then it would like a man kneeling down in front of Su Ming respectfully, his right hand lifted while he lowered his head. His palm was facing upwards, as if this was a strange ceremony and he was waiting for something.

Su Ming's expression was calm. He could sense the tree's submission. This was the embodiment of being suppressed by Ecang. When he walked closer, the will from his Ecang clone and the ancient memories existing in Ecang's soul caused him to instantly understand what the one thousand feet tall tree was waiting for with this ceremony.

He lifted his right hand and placed it gently on the red leaf.

At the instant he touched it, Su Ming sensed the tree's soul, and the tree's soul also sensed the pure Ecang presence from Su Ming. It also sensed a ripple of power hidden under the presence that caused its expression to change drastically. It was this ripple that made the one thousand feet tree shudder again. It straightened its trunk swiftly, and when it looked at Su Ming, there was a great wave of terror and a shock that surpassed what it had previously revealed in its eyes.

"You... You..." While the one thousand feet tall tree shuddered, its trunk quickly twisted and started changing ceaselessly in front of Su Ming. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a man and bowed deeply at Su Ming. He raised his hands and brought up the three-leafed grass to respectfully hand it over to him.

"I, Treant Ta Luo, have been protecting this treasure for ages, and I have been waiting for your arrival. You have finally come! I will obey the will of the fifth kiln's previous master, and whatever your will shall be, it will be the driving force for our lives!"

A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, and he stared at the man formed by the shoot in front of him coldly.

"What have you noticed?" Su Ming asked faintly.

"You are Progenitor Ecang, but you are also not Progenitor Ecang. You are... the master of the fifth kiln!"

Terror appeared on the man's face, but there was also zealousness. His gaze made it seem as if with just one sentence from Su Ming, he could be driven into a frenzy.

The words he said caused the brilliant light in Su Ming's eyes to become even brighter.

Even though he was already prepared for it, he still lifted his head and looked up. Echoing in his mind were the words from Dust Burners' Progenitor.

Su Xuan Yi was the previous master of the fifth kiln, and only his cursed son would have the right to become the new master of the fifth kiln.

Su Ming stared at the air in silence for a long, long time, then sighed in his heart, but soon, once he sighed, his eyes focused. Once he pondered over the man's words carefully, a fierce look appeared in his eyes.

"Did you just say that you have been waiting for me, and I have finally come?"

"It is not just me. All the living creatures in the fifth kiln have been waiting for you, for the scion of the previous master to become the new master of the fifth kiln." The man lifted his head and looked at Su Ming with fervent zeal.

"Who told you that I would come?" Su Ming asked calmly, but in that calm voice was a thought that had never appeared before in his head. This thought caused his breathing to quicken, and he seemed to have understood everything within an instant.

"When our old master came to the kiln the final time, fatigued, he delivered his will to all the existences in the kiln and told us... to continue waiting. His child will come to the fifth kiln many years later!"

A loud bang rang out in Su Ming's head. His body trembled faintly, and his eyes sparkled.

'He... isn't dead?' That thought that caused his breathing to quicken formed into three words when the bang rumbled in his head, and those words echoed ceaselessly in his mind.

Chapter 990 Su Ming's Nervousness

Su Ming remained silent for a time, then looked at the man in front of him and lifted his right hand to take the three-leaved grass that was shining with a thick green hue. He did not even have the urge to check the treasure, and with an apathetic expression put it away.

"Release Long Hai's soul," Su Ming said faintly.

Without any hesitation, the man that was the one thousand feet tall tree closed his eyes and then reopened them. Immediately, a crack appeared at the center of his brows. Everything within it was dark, before a ball of dark light flew out. That was a Nascent Divinity. Once it left the crack between the centre of the man's brows, it immediately turned into an old man.

The old man's face was filled with excitement. His Nascent Divinity shuddered, and his thoughts surged up in his head like waves. For a moment, all the things it went through for the past ten thousand years flashed through his mind.

He once thought that he would live the rest of his life as a puppet. In fact, while he lived without any freedom, he was not even be able to control his own death. He could only wait for a long, long period of time. This pain was enough to make a person break down, and his experience was not like those shared by the people who were in Ecang's foreign land. After all, they had their memories accompanying them and had hope placed before them.

However, the old man had nothing. If he was not an Almighty who was a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death and had a willpower that normal people would not possess, then during those ten thousand years, he would have lost himself a long time ago.

"Fulfill the promise you have not completed fully." Su Ming's voice interrupted the thoughts in the old man's heart. His Nascent Divinity floated in front of Su Ming, and when he heard it, he looked over, then after remaining silent for about the span of two breaths, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to Su Ming.

"I, Long Hai, am willing to protect you for ten thousand years to repay you for saving my life. My words are my oath, and now that I have said it, I will definitely fulfill my words!" As he bowed, the indistinct connection instantly became clear and fused into his heart.

This connection might not allow Su Ming to control Progenitor Long Hai, but it was an oath. If Progenitor Long Hai did not fulfill it, he would be suppressed by the entire universe. After all, this oath was sworn with his cultivation base.

In truth, the main point behind why Su Ming chose to save Progenitor Long Hai was because... he came from True Morning Dao World. After all, Su Ming had Possessed Dao Kong and also indirectly received the kismet from True Morning Dao World gathered on Dao Kong. Since he had also ruined the kismet gathered on Ye Wang, he became the one and only person to have this kismet on him.

Because of it, while changes might occur in the oaths from the cultivators who hailed from other True Worlds, but if those from True Morning Dao World swore to the person who was loved by the entire True World, then the oath would naturally not be so easily changed.

Su Ming cast Long Hai a glance, then swung his arm. Immediately, Progenitor Long Hai's Nascent Divinity charged over. Long Hai did not resist, but instead let himself be brought forward. At the instant he touched Su Ming's body, he fused into him, stepped into the supreme treasure, and turned into the seventh soul within it.

"Xuan Family's supreme treasure..." As Progenitor Long Hai's eyes began to shine, he immediately noticed the others' souls around him.

"You know this item?" Su Ming sent his thought to him.

"I went to the Xuan Family in the past and am on rather familiar terms with their Progenitor, which is why I know about this treasure." As Progenitor Long Hai spoke, Su Ming controlled the body to cast his eyes at the man that was the one hundred thousand feet tall tree in front of him.

The man remained kneeling in the air respectfully. The zealousness on his expression was as great as ever.

Su Ming remained silent for some time before asking calmly, "Can you leave this dimension?"

"I can't leave. Unless you step into the core of the fifth kiln and truly become the fifth kiln's master... and also repair the fifth kiln. Only then will we be able to venture out," the man immediately replied.

Su Ming fell silent again for a moment before he nodded towards the man. Under his respectful gaze, Su Ming turned around and walked into the distance. With one step, he arrived near the exit of the dimension, but then, his footsteps came to a halt.

However, he did not turn his head around. After a slight pause, he took a step into the exit and walked into the crack in the dimension before he disappeared from the place.

This time, Su Ming did not pay any attention to the loss of one thousand years. Once he stepped into the crack, he closed his eyes.

When he did so, the voice from Dust Burners' Progenitor echoed in his head again.

"The baby in his wife's stomach was cursed...

"Su Xuan Yi used all his divine abilities, but he could only make it so that the curse would not worsen. He could not dispel it...

"Until one day, he took his wife and left the place. We don't know where he went...

"The fifth kiln has two masters. Su Xuan Yi is the second one, but in truth, there is a third master. That is his son, but that person... has still not arrived."

Su Ming moved about in the dimension's crack. His expression remained the same as ever, but his shut eyes hid the complicated emotions in his heart which were born from his thoughts. They also hid the words the man that was the one thousand feet tall tree had said just then.

"When our old master came to the kiln the final time, fatigued, he delivered his will to all the existences in the kiln and told us... to continue waiting. His child will come to the fifth kiln many years later!"

With a complicated expression on his face, Su Ming opened his eyes and looked at the time flowing away. He did not bother about the loss of years. Understanding appeared in his eyes, but the complicated emotions that accompanied this understanding were filled with grief that no one could understand.

He seemed to be able to vaguely envision Su Xuan Yi taking his wife and borrowing the fifth kiln's power in dismay, then leaving the Fifth True World when it was destroyed by the four Great True Worlds working together.

In Divine Essence Star Ocean, he saw the baby in his wife's body continuously tortured by the curse and watched his wife gradually becoming thinner and weaker, and his heart was filled with grief, but he could do nothing about it. He had used every method that he could and every divine ability he possessed, but he still could not neutralize the curse from which his child suffered.

Many years later, he took his wife and left. He should have found a method that could make the curse on the baby disappear, and with excitement as well as hope, he walked out of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

However, complications happened during the process. When they were passing by True Morning Dao World, a great change occurred. Dao Chen's greed and the chase by the entire Morning Dao Sect caused him, who had continuously given up his cultivation

base and other sort of things over the years for his wife and his son, to be incredibly tired, and to protect his wife and son, he could not bring out his true power.

During that battle... his wife died. In extreme grief, he went mad and let out a long string of shrill laughter towards the heavens. In that laughter were tears, along with a madness that longed to destroy the world and shatter the universe.

Once he declared that Morning Dao World would be made for Abyss, he... disappeared.

Perhaps... at that time, he had also given up on the method that he originally wanted to use to get rid of the curse in the baby's body. Instead, he chose another path.

He should have succeeded in his path, or else why would he have returned to the fifth kiln with fatigue in his bones then said such words to the living beings there.

His sentence clearly showed that he had been separated from his son, but he was certain that he would some day come back to the fifth kiln and find traces of his whereabouts in this place.

The grief on Su Ming's face was mixed with complicated emotions as well as confusion. He was unfamiliar with the term 'father'. When he was young, he saw that all his companions had fathers when he was in the tribe, but he did not. He had been sad before and once asked his elder about it, but he never obtained his answer.

He had always thought that he was a child that was picked up somewhere. This might have been a thought within him when he was a child, but it had accompanied him for thousands of years. When he thought back to it, he could still sense the envy and anguish in his heart at that time.

He was envious that other people had mothers and fathers, but he did not.

'When... he fought against Dao Chen in the past, his wife died... and he went mad... but he insisted on returning to the fifth kiln... Did he just come back to say these words? Or did he choose... to come here to heal?' Su Ming looked at the crack around him, then at the years of his life disappearing from him, and he fell silent.

'If he is healing here, then could it be... that he is currently in the fifth kiln?!' A strange light rose in Su Ming's eyes. This thought caused him to be unable to control his own emotions.

'Or perhaps...' Su Ming shuddered. He had another guess. This guess was based on the vitality and life force that was absorbed by the cracks in the dimensions.

'When he returned in the past, he was not alone. Instead, he held onto a corpse, a woman's corpse, which was his wife...

'He returned to the fifth kiln and placed his wife at the core, then changed the structure inside the fifth kiln. He had Dust Burners execute a plan that would last for ages, causing the fifth kiln to be activated often, and he used the supreme treasures in this land to attract numerous powerful warriors.

'He made them fight over the supreme treasures and move through the dimensions while they offered up a large amount of their life, and he used it... to revive his wife!' Su Ming trembled. This thought continuously spun in his head until it became everything in his mind.

'Which of these guesses is real?' Su Ming closed his eyes.

After a long time, when he walked out of the crack and stepped into another dimension, he opened his eyes. The complicated emotions remained on his face, but the lost look in his eyes was now mixed... with a nervousness that came from his heart!

This nervousness was not due to excitement or fear, but because he had remembered the woman who held him in her arms when he was still an infant. She had appeared in the illusion dug out from the depths of his memories when he was in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. That unfamiliar but warm feeling as well as the insistence of protecting the child even in death was branded into Su Ming's life and became a mark that would not fade away.

That unfamiliarity and warmth turned into a faint murmur by Su Ming's ears at that moment.

"Su..." Su Ming shuddered and lifted his head. He did not look at the world in the dimension, but at the universe.

"Is it you..." he mumbled.

Chapter 991 Killing Inten

Within the many dimensions in the fifth kiln were three borders. They were like boundary lines that divided the fifth kiln into four regions.

These borders were formed by a ring of floating platforms, and each one of them was known as Spirit Trudging Platform.

At that moment, there were six platforms shining with a faint light. They were connected together, and could be seen from the distance. As for the other platforms, they were shrouded by a layer of fog, making it so people would be unable to see them clearly and tell what precisely was on them.

Six shining Spirit Trudging Platforms meant that there were six people who had stepped into the fifth kiln. If more people arrived, then more Spirit Trudging Platforms would be revealed from their indistinct state.

This was the curious aspect about the fifth kiln. It seemed to possess life and could sense the number of people who stepped in it, then use Spirit Trudging Platforms by the three borders to show their number. If anyone died, their Spirit Trudging Platform would disappear.

At that moment, there were two people who were sitting and meditating on two of the six Spirit Trudging Platforms. Needless to say, they were Reverend Zi Long and the yellow-browed man.

Their levels of cultivation were the highest, which was why they were the faster to move through the dimensions in the outer layer and arrive at the third level's border. They had been waiting in this place for a long time.

The two of them did not choose to continue moving forward, but chose to wait for the others. To them, the dimensions beyond the third level's border might be mixed up, but as long as their luck was not too bad, then with their power, they should not die. At most, they would spend different amounts of time to reach this place.

Based on their speculations, with just one more day, the others should be able to arrive one after another.

But just then, while the yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long were meditating with their eyes closed and not speaking to each other, because of which the area was in a state of silence, light started to shine around the third platform.

The flashing light instantly caused the space around them to brighten up, and it made Reverend Zi Long to open his eyes with a hint of surprise within them.

The yellow-browed man on the other platform also opened his eyes. His gaze fell on the flashing platform, and though his expression remained the same, his heart was also filled with curiosity. He wondered who would be the third after him and Zi Long to arrive in this place and who was clearly slightly earlier from their estimated time.

When the both of them looked over, the flashing light from the third platform instantly reached its brightest. As it flashed rapidly, it looked as if even the platform had descended into a state of chaos, continuously changing from a state of being an illusion to being something real.

After a moment, an indistinct figure appeared out of thin air and slowly gained corporeal form... Based on the figure's outline, Zi Long and the yellow-browed man could tell that this was not Zhu You Cai or Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

This could only be the white-robed teenager that was the centipede or Su Ming, who was the weakest among them in terms of their level of cultivation but seemed to possess some sort of mystery.

When that figure gained complete physical form several breaths later, Su Ming stood on the platform. His expression was apathetic, and there was not a hint of emotion about him. He looked around him in silence then sat down cross-legged in silence.

Su Ming's appearance immediately caused a sparkle to appear in the yellow-browed man's eyes. This was the second time he paid attention to this person who did not speak much in front of him.

The first time was during the previous gamble, but compared to this time, the attention he paid to him during the previous gamble was somewhat insignificant. The yellow-browed man cast Su Ming a deep glance. He knew that if luck could be used to explain why Su Ming arrived earlier during the gamble, then when he became the third person to walk out this time, it was enough to prove his strength.

For all people with power, no matter where they were, they could receive respect. The yellow-browed man fell into contemplative silence for a moment before he swept his gaze past Su Ming's body, and some thoughts formed in his head.

Once Zi Long saw that the person who walked out was Su Ming, his eyes instantly focused, but he did not say anything. Instead, he closed his eyes again and began meditating.

It was very quiet. Su Ming and the other two were all sitting cross-legged. None of them spoke. Su Ming lifted his head to look at the air. He watched the fog tumbling about, creating a cloudy look, and he recalled the two guesses he'd made.

No matter which one was correct, to him, this time, his trip to the fifth kiln would no doubt become a brand that would not be destroyed in his life.

Su Ming closed his eyes. He still had no answer to this matter, but he knew clearly that as he got closer to the core of the fifth kiln, more and more of his questions would be answered.

It would continue becoming clearer until he saw everything distinctly, and he would see... which of his two guesses were correct.

As Su Ming meditated, time trickled by slowly. When about a day passed, light shone from the fourth platform. Just like when Su Ming appeared previously, when the light from the fourth platform reached its brightest, an indistinct figure appeared inside.

Before that figure became clear, the fifth platform started shining as well, and an indistinct figure appeared there too.

As the two platforms shone, the area was basked in alternating shades of light and dark. Several breaths later, Zhu You Cai stepped onto the fourth platform. His body was incredibly large. When his foot landed on the platform, it shuddered.

Once he appeared, he immediately looked towards the shining fifth platform, but surprise soon appeared in his eyes. On the fifth platform, the white-robed teenager who was the centipede took shape.

When Zhu You Cai looked over, the white-robed teenager also met his gaze. Once the two of them exchanged glances, they did not speak, but looked around them at the same time. The yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long's figures did not cause much changes in their expressions, but when they saw Su Ming, their pupils contracted.

Su Ming was on the third platform and did not open his eyes because of the light flashing from the fourth and the fifth platform. However, when Zhu You Cai and the white-robed teenager looked over in his direction, he seemed to have noticed it and opened his eyes, then looked back in a brusque manner. There was an aloof and indifferent look contained in his eyes.

Zhu You Cai's eyes shone, and he chose to avoid his gaze. He did not look at Su Ming for too long and sat down cross-legged before he trained his eyes towards the empty sixth platform. He was slightly puzzled in his heart. What exactly had happened to Flame Fiends' Progenitor that prevented him from rushing over here for so long?

As for the white-robed teenager, he flashed Su Ming a well-intentioned smile before wrapping his fist in his palm as a greeting to him. Once he did so, he sat down and seized the air with his right hand. The catwoman immediately appeared. She looked thin and haggard, and the bite marks on her neck had already turned pitch black, but her eyes remained apathetic, as if she had lost her soul.

The white-robed teenager bit down on her neck again. Su Ming watched this scene with a cold gaze. Though his expression did not change, the people in the body formed by the supreme treasure all sensed a killing intent coming from Su Ming's soul.

This killing intent caused their souls to chill. Only Progenitor Long Hai thought of something when he saw the catwoman. In truth, when he fused into the body formed by the supreme treasure earlier, he noticed Xu Hui, and once he did so, a number of guesses had already formed in his heart. Progenitor Long Hai might not have seen Xu Hui before, but her presence and the unique cultivation method that belonged to Phoenix Sect could naturally not be hidden from him.

'Phoenix Sect's Sacred Lady... Supreme treasure from the Xuan Family, and this catwoman who has clearly been struck by Phoenix Sect's Transformation Curse... and he could even make that damn tree worship him. Just... who is this person?' Progenitor Long Hai's expression remained as impassive as ever, but he was already beginning to guess Su Ming's status.

Su Ming watched the white-robed teenager absorb the catwoman's blood and essence. Even though this woman did not have too much of a connection to him, she had called him her master. Since he replaced everything about Dao Kong, then with how protective Su Ming was of his friends and family, this was enough for his killing intent to rise.

If it was not because the white-robed teenager was clearly with Reverend Zi Long and Su Ming would not only not be able to achieve his goal but even be in danger if he attacked, he would have struck a long time ago.

At that moment, he swept his gaze past the white-robed teenager. His expression remained the same and no one else could tell that he had the desire to kill him. Since he could scheme against Flame Fiends' Progenitor who clearly harbored malicious intent towards him, he could naturally use a similar method to kill another person.

So what if he was... a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death?!

If Su Ming brought out his full power and had Progenitor Long Hai attack at full force, then this would no longer be just the power of Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death. Instead... he would truly possess power that belonged to a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. This was also part of the reason why Su Ming had saved Progenitor Long Hai.

When Su Ming averted his gaze, he closed his eyes and hid away the killing intent that no one could detect under his calm gaze. However, at the instant he closed his eyes, he suddenly opened them again.

His gaze landed on the catwoman, and after a long while, when he closed his eyes to meditate again, a huge wave stirred in his heart.

During that instant just then, Su Ming had suddenly thought of something. He had replaced Dao Kong and was in control of everything about him, and the main reason behind it was that he was an Abyss Builder. He had the innate ability to Possess others.

Then with the high level of cultivation Su Xuan Yi possessed... How powerful would be his innate ability to Possess others?!

If Su Ming could Possess Ecang, then could Su Xuan Yi have... After his fight against Dao Chen?

This sudden thought caused Su Ming's breathing to quicken. He remembered Dao Chen entering isolation... remembered how he had met Dao Kong when he came to Divine Essence Star Ocean.

'If all of this is the embodiment of his will, then could it be his arrangement that Dao Kong appeared here? And Xu Hui... was also sent here together?' As Su Ming's thoughts changed, the sixth Spirit Trudging Platform suddenly shone with a powerful light.

The only person who could walk out of the sixth Spirit Trudging Platform... was Flame Fiends' Progenitor who lost his physical body and now only had his Nascent Divinity left!

When Su Ming lifted his head to look over, a piercing cold glare shone in his eyes. He wanted to see what Flame Fiends' Progenitor would say and what expression he would have once he saw Su Ming after he lost his physical body.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 992 Shifting the Direction of the Disaster - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 992 Shifting the Direction of the Disaster

Chapter 992 Shifting the Direction of the Disaster

Su Ming was not the only one who shifted his gaze to the sixth platform. The other four people also looked over, especially Zhu You Cai. There was even a hint of hesitation on his face. He was incredibly puzzled as to what reason could have made Flame Fiends' Progenitor be the last one to arrive.

As for the white-robed teenager who was the centipede, a dark light shone in his eyes, and when he looked towards the sixth platform, a speculative look appeared on his face.

It could be said that Su Ming's expression was the most normal among the group. He watched the sixth platform shine and waited for Flame Fiends' Progenitor to arrive. He wanted to see whether the Progenitor would dare tell the truth.

The sixth platform shone even brighter, and after a moment, an indistinct figure manifested on the platform. The instant that figure appeared, the yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long let out faint gasps of surprise.

Zi Long's eyes focused on the indistinct figure on the sixth platform before he stood up slowly. With surprise in his eyes, he looked towards the white-robed teenager.

His act of getting up and his gaze instantly caused the white-robed teenager to be stunned, and the surprise in Zi Long's eyes especially puzzled him. He could not understand why Zi Long would do such a thing, because to him, the sixth platform did not seem to have anything special.

Zi Long saw the stunned expression on the white-robed teenager's face, then frowned before looking towards Zhu You Cai, but he soon averted his gaze. His eyes lingered hesitantly on Su Ming for a moment before he looked towards the yellow-browed man.

At that moment, the yellow-browed man also rose up. His expression turned incomparably grim while he stared intently at the sixth platform. His eyes shone for a few times, and then he also looked first towards the white-robed teenager who was the centipede before he swept his gaze past Zhu You Cai and Su Ming. In the end, he looked at Zi Long, and their gazes met.

Su Ming watched all of this from the platform in the distance, and while his expression was calm, his heart had already become wary. He had been able to tell earlier that Zi Long and Huang Mei were the strongest. Judging by what happened at that moment, the depth of their power was not in Mastery Realm, but the laws of fate, or else it would have been quite impossible for them to see the change in power in the indistinct Flame Fiends' Progenitor who appeared while the sixth platform shone when the white-robed teenager, Zhu You Cai, and even Su Ming himself were unable to see it.

'The two of them first suspected the white-robed teenager attacking in the dark, making it clear that he is not as he seems. Perhaps it should be said that this person has a trump card that can make both Zi Long and Yellow Brows regard him seriously.

'Then it was Zhu You Cai, and the last one is me, but it seems that the two of them aren't certain of who it was... In fact, they are even suspecting each other.' Su Ming saw all of this clearly. At that moment, his expression was not his usual calm look, but he a shocked expression he put on while he looked at the sixth platform.

Of course, this shocked expression was an act, or else the perpetrator would be a little too obvious.

Zi Long and Huang Mei's unusual behavior also caused Zhu You Cai to stand up. He had a vague feeling that something bad had happened. Almost at the instant this feeling appeared, his expression changed drastically, because at that moment, even he had finally sensed that something was wrong about Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who had now appeared on the sixth platform!

"He-he lost his physical body!" Zhu You Cai said in a low tone, his expression changing.

The white-robed teenager from the other platform had already noticed this. His expression then changed as well. Clearly, he now knew why Reverend Zi Long's expression was so grim, why he looked towards him, and why the yellow-browed man also fixed his gaze on him.

After all, even if the fifth kiln was dangerous, to them, even though there were things that could endanger their lives in the area beyond the third level's border, these dangers were rare and few in between. The real dangers would usually appear more frequently the closer they got to the core.

Even though based on their experiences there were indeed cultivators who disappeared or died in the area beyond the third level's border, there were only one or two who died among those who had truly become Almighties in Mastery Realm.

No one knew the reason behind why those people had died. There was a possibility that they were ambushed and died, and it was also possible that they ran into the rare, dangerous dimensions and died within them.

That was why when they noticed that Flame Fiends' Progenitor did not possess a physical body, their first reaction was that he was ambushed, but there was also a possibility that he ran into one of the rare, dangerous dimensions, which was why he was in such a pathetic state. In fact, they could already imagine that if Flame Fiends' Progenitor hadn't resolutely given up on his physical body, then he would have definitely ended up having his body and soul destroyed.

'Was Flame Fiends' Progenitor ambushed or did he run into a dangerous dimension that forced him to become like this?' This was the thought that appeared in all the people's hearts except Su Ming's during that moment.

Several breaths later, the light around the sixth platform reached its brightest. When it reached a piercing degree, it swiftly darkened, and the exhausted Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor appeared before the people's eyes.

Huang Mei and Zi Long stared intently at him with a fierce gaze.

As for Zhu You Cai, he sighed in his heart and looked at Flame Fiends' Progenitor with an expression full of emotion.

The white-robed teenager narrowed his eyes, and a faint glint shone within them. Even though it might seem normal, those who understood him would definitely be able to see the darkness in his eyes, along with the hint of greed within there.

It was very quiet in the area. Everyone looked towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Su Ming narrowed his eyes slightly, but the calmness and indifference in them didn't allow people to tell what he was thinking.

With the dead silence came an indistinct mighty pressure. It enveloped Flame Fiends' Progenitor, but it did not cause his expression to change. Clearly, from the moment he decided to walk out, he had already thought of all the things he might encounter. He thought about his companions' greed and the dangers he would have to face after he lost his physical body and his power fell.

After all, not only did his power fall, he also only had his Nascent Divinity left. A Nascent Divinity that belonged to an Almighty in Mastery Realm was a great supplement for some cultivators. They could also turn it into the best Vessel Spirit for a supreme treasure.

In fact, there were other uses as well, such as turning it into a puppet or a medicinal core. There were plenty of uses for him, and the level of misery in it was enough to make people regret why they had not died right away.

Everyone was silent. Flame Fiends' Progenitor was also silent. While standing on the sixth platform, he lifted his head to look around him coldly. At that moment, under everyone's gazes, the first one he looked towards was not Su Ming... but the white-robed teenager!

When he looked towards him, a powerful resentment appeared in his eyes. That resentment was so strong and distinct that it was immediately noticed by the others.

The white-robed teenager was first stunned, then his expression changed drastically, because not only did Reverend Zi Long look towards him, even Huang Mei and Zhu You Cai turned their gazes towards him.

"It's not me!" the white-robed teenager immediately shouted and glared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor. "You old fool, what's the meaning of this?! Do you want your entire race to die?!"

Su Ming saw this, and his eyes flashed slightly. A barely noticeable smile appeared on his lips.

'What a diabolical and scheming man you are, Flame Fiends' Progenitor...' Su Ming's smile gradually grew cold.

'He knew that he would definitely be targeted by others as a Nascent Divinity, but he doesn't want to die. If he told the others that he was injured by me, it would bring no benefit to him. It would just make the others wary. After all, it's unlikely for anyone who is wary of me to stand up for him and make things troublesome for me. Besides, he is of the same value as a supreme treasure right now. That's why... he forced down his resentment against me and chose not to say it because he's waiting for others to end up in the same state as he is.

'He directed the target to the white-robed teenager, making the others suspect him. This should be a part of his plan. If I were him, then my next step would be...'

When Su Ming looked towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he saw the Progenitor move, and with an incredibly quick speed, he rushed out of the sixth platform as a Nascent Divinity to instantly appear on Su Ming's platform.

This scene drew all the others' attention.

"Fellow Daoist, if you ensure my safety, then I am willing to give you the planet my race calls its home as a price, and I have a deep understanding towards the fifth kiln. I can

help you avoid detours. I wonder what you think about it?" Flame Fiends' Progenitor wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming while he stood on his platform.

The others might not know about this, but Su Ming knew about it. The bitterness and grievances in Flame Fiends' Progenitor's heart had to be monstrous while he bowed to him.

'He's shifting the direction of the disaster.' Su Ming's expression remained the same, but he started laughing coldly in his heart.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor had to have a good relationship with Zhu You Cai, which was why he did not want to drag Zhu You Cai into this mess. The one he hated the most was Su Ming, which was why as long as he stayed by his side, the disaster would be brought to him. The Progenitor himself would be a bait to draw the other people's greed to him.

Before he came over though, he first provoked the white-robed teenager, and it could be said that the person who would definitely not let him go easily would be the white-robed teenager.

The actions might have seemed sudden, but when Su Ming thought about them carefully, this was very logical. After all, Su Ming's power was the lowest among the group, and at that moment, the weakened Flame Fiends' Progenitor looked as if he was choosing Su Ming as an equal and it was something that was fitting in other people's eyes.

If he chose other people to protect him, then there was a high possibility that he would be walking straight into his own death.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor lifted his head. When he looked at Su Ming, there was a madness within them that only Su Ming could notice, and this madness was very easy to understand.

If Su Ming refused, then Flame Fiends' Progenitor would do everything that he could, even willingly become a Vessel Spirit for the person who agreed to kill Su Ming. This was him using his death to drag Su Ming down to hell with him.

However, he didn't really want to die, so his intentions were very clear.

He was betting that Su Ming was unable to kill him instantly and betting that the others would follow after them after they stepped into the next dimension.

Chapter 993 Put up an Ac

The Progenitor was also betting that he could live through this chaos. Besides, there was nothing left for him to lose. Even if he misjudged the situation and no one would follow him into the next dimension he stepped into, causing him to die in Su Ming's hands, then once he disappeared, everyone would know that Su Ming obtained his Nascent Divinity, and because of that, he would truly be able to shift the disaster in another direction.

This situation made it seem as if no matter what Flame Fiends' Progenitor did, Su Ming would still find it hard to not be chased down.

If Su Ming could seal him so quickly that Zhu You Cai could not save him in time and cause others to be unable to take action, then he could be considered to have destroyed this trap. But the prerequisite was that he gave the Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor to someone else.

However, Su Ming... did not choose to destroy the trap this way, even if he was confident he could do so if he had Progenitor Long Hai bring forth all his power and Su Ming fused it with his Ecang clone.

A faint smile appeared on his lips.

"Very well," he said. Once he said these words, he instantly drew all the people's attention. Under the old monsters' gazes, Su Ming sat calmly, without a single change in his expression.

His words made even Flame Fiends' Progenitor narrow his eyes. The madness in them disappeared, replaced by a hint of uncertainty, but it was soon hidden when he bowed.

"Thank you, fellow Daoist." Flame Fiends' Progenitor forced down the resentment in his heart and was compelled to say these words.

Zhu You Cai frowned and scrutinized the Flame Fiend, then looked at Su Ming before looking away, occupied with his thoughts. As for the others, no one knew what they thought about, but based on their expressions, nothing much seemed to have changed. Only the white-robed teenager who was the centipede cast Flame Fiends' Progenitor a sinister look, then frowned and swept his gaze past Su Ming.

"Words are all empty promises. If you attack me while I am not on guard... It's difficult for me to make my decision, it'll be best if you swear an oath." Su Ming turned his head around and looked towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor. There was a ghost of a smile on his face, along with a calmness within his eyes that no one else could understand. Only Flame Fiends' Progenitor did.

The Flame Fiend hesitated for a moment, then looked at Su Ming, and their gazes met.

"I, Huo Kui, swear by my Nascent Divinity, and the universe bears as my witness. If you are truly willing to ensure my safety, then in the fifth kiln, I will definitely not attack you." Similarly, only Su Ming could understand his words.

This was him telling Su Ming that he only wanted to survive, and if Su Ming truly wanted to help him, then he would put all their previous enmity in the fifth kiln completely behind him.

As Flame Fiends' Progenitor swore his oath, an indistinct connection formed in Su Ming's heart, signaling that the oath had taken effect.

Su Ming nodded calmly. There were no other words exchanged between them. When he began meditating, not a single hint of what he felt could be seen on his face. Even though he knew giving his promise to Flame Fiends' Progenitor was a trap, Su Ming still stepped into it, because he had his own judgments.

If Flame Fiends' Progenitor had not chosen to provoke the white-robed teenager, he would not have bothered, but he had chosen the person Su Ming wanted to kill the most, and because of it, he could be considered to have fulfilled Su Ming's intentions.

"Alright, everyone's here now. Then let's move to the subsequent dimensions. The dimensions in this level will be much more dangerous than before. I hope that all of us will appear on the Spirit Trudging Platforms on the second border and not be buried eternally in this place," the yellow-browed man said coldly.

When he spoke, he lifted his right hand and pushed down swiftly on the Spirit Trudging Platform beneath him. Immediately, light shone, and a vortex appeared under his feet. It looked like a Relocation Rune.

The others followed his actions, and as the vortexes appeared, light blossomed under Su Ming's feet.

Once booming sounds came from the Runes on all platforms, large, tumbling waves immediately rose in the space in the distance. They were the Fire Spirits rushing over when they heard the noise.

Zi Long cast a profound look at Su Ming before he disappeared into the Rune beneath him. Then, the yellow-browed man looked as if he hesitated for a moment before he disappeared without a trace as well.

As for Zhu You Cai, he remained silent for several breaths. When he saw that the space around him was tumbling about even more and shrill roars were coming closer, he cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor before he moved and disappeared into the Rune beneath him. At that moment, only Su Ming, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and the white-robed teenager remained on their platforms and did not move.

Su Ming's expression remained the same while he looked to his right.

The white-robed teenager stared back. After some time, when he saw that the shadows of the Fire Spirits had already appeared in the space around them, he let out a cold harrumph and disappeared without a trace. Once he was gone, Su Ming also stepped into the Rune beneath him. Flame Fiends' Progenitor's eyes flashed, and while he hesitated, he gritted his teeth and stepped into the Rune as well.

At the instant the two of them disappeared, the light on platform in which the white-robed teenager had stayed suddenly flowed in reverse, and the youth appeared again.

'My skills with Runes are above those of other people, but how could you peasants know about it?' The white-robed teenager took a step forward and charged towards the platform Su Ming had disappeared into, and when he landed, he entered the Rune there.

Once the people disappeared, a large swarm of Fire Spirits reached the platforms. In the blink of an eye, they filled the space. Shrill screams rose into the air and traveled faintly into the Rune before dissipating.

Su Ming appeared in a land filled with flames. The sky was burning, the earth was roaring, and when he looked over, volcanoes were erupting madly on the ground. Black smoke went up to the sky in billows, as if it could cover the sky, but it could not cover the sea of fire above, burning everything in all directions continuously.

There were rivers on the ground, but the water within them was red. It was not blood, but lava.

Not a single hint of green could be seen on the ground. This was a world of fire.

Once Su Ming appeared, Flame Fiends' Progenitor also manifested behind him. Almost at the instant he appeared, he moved back and maintained a set amount of distance between himself and Su Ming. There was no one else in this place, and he no longer hid the resentment in his eyes while he glared over.

"If you kill me, then everyone will know that you have my Nascent Divinity in your control, and it'll be difficult for you to escape from everyone!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor said in a dark voice.

"Why would I want to kill you?" Su Ming asked flatly and looked at the wary Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"How would I know why you ambushed me and forced me to explore my physical body explode?! It's because of you that I'm stuck in this predicament!" The resentment in Flame Fiends' Progenitor swiftly erupted on his face. His hatred towards Su Ming had already reached a heinous extent.

"I attacked you because you harbored the intent to kill me. If you didn't direct your enmity towards me, then I would have naturally not attacked you. Destroying your physical body was just a warning. I'm warning you again now: Don't provoke me," Su Ming said calmly. As he spoke, a domineering presence spread out from his body. That presence spread in all directions, stirring up the sea of fire to tumble about even more furiously than before.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor stayed silent and did not speak.

"Since I already warned you and you chose me to protect you, then I will naturally not kill you, but do you want another physical body?" Su Ming asked faintly.

"The choice of a physical body for us Flame Fiends is extremely important. Unless it's a physical body in Mastery Realm, then the effect will be less than us with just our Nascent Divinities.

"That physical body of mine you destroyed was one I obtained after much effort in the past. Now, I have several physical bodies among my people acting as backups, but they are all just in Solar Kalpa Realm. They aren't in Mastery Realm," he began explaining in detail when he seemed to have vaguely come to understand Su Ming's thoughts. A glint shone in his eyes.

"And I am on rather friendly terms with Zhu You Cai..." Flame Fiends' Progenitor said again.

The meaning behind his words might have seemed indistinct, but in truth, it was already very clear.

"You will soon have a new physical body," Su Ming stated slowly. In truth, Progenitor Long Hai also needed a physical body, but Su Ming did not fancy giving him the white-robed teenager's physical body.

"Huang Mei and Zi Long are equal in terms of their levels of cultivation, and since they are both wary of each other, they are held back by each other. Neither of them will attack so easily, but the youth also has extraordinary power. He is also a manifestation of the Heavenly Centipede. I heard that he has the blood of Ancient Wu, which hails from the world beyond the four Great True Worlds... Once he activates his blood, he can activate the channel guiding Ancient Wu to him and turn into the Ancient Power."

Once Flame Fiends' Progenitor finished saying these words, a powerful, resentful aura instantly rose up with a bang in the originally empty spot beside Su Ming. That resentful aura swept through the entire area and caused the flames in the place to spread outwards.

As the resentful aura gathered together, the Resentful Wei manifested. The eyes of the two dragon heads shone with an eerie light as they stared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who instinctively took a few steps back.

"If you're added into the mix, will it be enough?" Su Ming asked flatly.

"He is so fast that he can break the universe," Flame Fiends' Progenitor said immediately. His eyes had already brightened up.

"Then let's put up an act so he won't want to run away." As he said these words languidly, killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes, and he charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The Resentful Wei moved, and the black, resentful fire under its hooves tumbled outwards in all directions, instantly filling the entire area around Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Su Ming had already closed in during that time. When he lifted his right hand, he seized the air in the direction of Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

With it, a myriad of thoughts appeared in the head of the Flame Fiend. He instinctively moved back, then opened his mouth to let out a shrill screech. As he did so, the power of his Nascent Divinity shone, and an arm bone flew out of his body. It was illusory, but it crashed swiftly against Su Ming's incoming palm.

Booming sounds rose into the air, and Su Ming took a few steps back. Flame Fiends' Progenitor also shuddered and staggered a few steps back, but he let out a big sigh of relief in his heart. Su Ming might have looked as if he had used his full strength in that strike just then, but in truth, since Flame Fiends' Progenitor had a marginal understanding of Su Ming's true power, he knew that he had not used his full strength.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor took a step forward, and when he attacked again, he sent a divine thought to Su Ming. "How long are we putting up this act?"

"Until he takes action."

"What if he doesn't attack?"

"Then we'll act until no one can tell whether this is true or fake." At the instant Su Ming sent this thought outwards, he lifted his right hand. The weather changed, the sea of fire tumbled about, and a gigantic palm manifested in front of him. It charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor with a bang.

Chapter 994 Real? Fake?

The battle caused the weather to change and the world to roar.

The sea of fire in the sky continuously tumbled about and fell backwards, the fire on the ground spread due to the impact, causing the lava to flow backwards, the air to sparkle in a dazzling manner, the sky to look as if black, resentful flames had sealed off all directions, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor to look as if he could not escape.

As loud, booming sounds spread out, Su Ming executed a myriad of divine abilities, and a different atmosphere gradually appeared as Flame Fiends' Progenitor continued acting in this farce of a fight.

He harbored a grudge towards Su Ming since the start, and no matter how many explanations Su Ming provided, it would be difficult to dispel that grudge. Originally, he had it suppressed, but at that moment, as they attacked, this resentment could no longer be suppressed. It fused into his attacks, causing the world to tremble in the mid of the booming sounds brought about as they fought.

As time trickled by, the two of them did not fight in one area, but instead continued moving forward as they battled in the sky. Yet no matter how much Flame Fiends' Progenitor attacked, he was still surrounded by the black, resentful flames, and that sea of fire was continuously shrinking. Each time it shrank to the greatest limit, it would force Flame Fiends' Progenitor to use his divine abilities to strike it, and only then could he send the resentful flames back once more.

The white-robed teenager still did not appear, but in truth, there was a figure hiding in lava on the ground since a long time ago. This figure was not big, only the size of a finger. It was a red centipede.

It was in the lava and did not stand out. No one would be able to notice its existence.

Through the lava, it saw Su Ming and Flame Fiends' Progenitor fighting in the sky. Its eyes shone, but it did not choose to show itself or attack. It wanted to first judge whether this was an act trying to lure him out.

It might have chased after them, but it always thought that there was some form of connection that it did not know between Su Ming and Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

While it waited, the battle between Su Ming and Flame Fiends' Progenitor became even fiercer. In fact, there were a few times that flames from the Resentful Wei almost caused the Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor to be destroyed.

However, the centipede still did not attack. Instead, there was a cold look in its eyes, along with a hint of derision.

'What a fake act, and they have managed to act till now? The black horse only traps him and does not join the battle. There's something off about this. It's certain that they're trying to lure me out.' The centipede who was the white-robed teenager thought like this as he let out a cold harrumph.

Three days later, Su Ming and Flame Fiends' Progenitor were on a volcano. The divine abilities they used as they fought against each other were endless. Booming sounds spread all around. The Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor was incredibly exhausted. In fact, there were several times when he wanted to escape, but he was swept up by the black resentful flames, forcing him back.

He also noticed that Su Ming's attacks were getting fiercer. His power was no longer like it was a few days ago and was continuously increasing. This caused Flame Fiends' Progenitor to immediately have endless thoughts spring in his mind.

'Could it be that he wants to kill me, and this isn't an act...' Flame Fiends' Progenitor could not decide. In fact, he could not tell clearly whether Su Ming truly wanted to lure the white-robed teenager or whether... he wanted to kill him.

'But if he wanted to kill me, he could have done so easily when he attacked at the start. Why drag on until now?' Flame Fiends' Progenitor became uncertain again.

Just as he thought that, Su Ming took a step forward. He lifted his right hand, and a huge mountain manifested in the air. That mountain was naturally Dao Avenue Mountain, and it charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

When it was about to close in on him, the Flame Fiend let out a low growl, then formed a seal with both his hands. His Nascent Divinity immediately changed and turned into a soaring bird that swiftly flew into the sky.

However, at the instant he flew up, a dark light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He formed a seal with his left hand, and the shadow of the sun, moon, and stars shone in his eyes. Immediately, the entire sky above Flame Fiends' Progenitor darkened as the world rumbled. The sea of fire spread out. A huge face appeared swiftly in the sky.

It was an illusion, Su Ming's Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon. It was the power which would exist if someone believed in it.

That face belonged to the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled. Once it appeared, it opened its mouth wide and sucked in a sharp breath in the direction of Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The expression of the old man changed drastically. When he moved back, he spread his arms outwards, and immediately, his Nascent Divinity changed again into a gigantic python. The python hissed, then curled up into a Rune, but at the instant he formed the Snake Rune, the Resentful Wei around it formed a sea of fire that tumbled backwards swiftly. The black flames, along with Dao Avenue Mountain as well as the gigantic face in the sky rushed towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed again. He could sense a powerful killing intent, and it caused his Nascent Divinity to tremble. At that moment, he had no

time to think about whether this was an act. The giant python he turned into immediately spread out and crashed into the incoming resentful flames with a bang.

As the resentful flames spread out, Su Ming's Dao Avenue Mountain closed in. The giant face in the sky pushed down, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a roar that shook the sky. His Nascent Divinity shrank and turned into a huge ball of light. When they crashed into each other, the ball of light spread out rapidly. This was Flame Fiends' Progenitor using the essence within his Nascent Divinity. It was the first time during these three days that he did not hesitate to use his own Nascent Divinity to fight against Su Ming.

Booming sounds surged into the sky, causing cracks to appear in the sky and the ground to shatter. Amid these loud bangs, the face in the sky shattered, Dao Avenue Mountain collapsed, and Su Ming froze for a moment in midair. Flame Fiends' Progenitor retreated swiftly and turned back to human form, his Nascent Divinity had become incredibly dull.

"What are you doing?!"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor had a dark expression on his face, but he did not say these words outright. Instead, he sent his divine thought to Su Ming while he retreated swiftly. However, at the instant he retreated, the sea of fire formed by the Resentful Wei swept up and prevented him from leaving. Killing intent also spread out from those resentful flames. It and the obstruction formed by the flames immediately let Flame Fiends' Progenitor realize that he... could truly no longer escape from the ring of flames formed by this resentful aura!

After all, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had intentionally made it seem that he could not escape the previous few times. If he truly wanted to leave, he could have done so by sacrificing some of his essence, but now... he realized in shock that he... truly could not escape.

This realization also allowed him to see that this was not an act they put to lure the white-robed teenager to attack. This was... Su Ming wanting to kill him!

As for why he had not immediately attacked a few days ago, it was because he could still make his Nascent Divinity self-destruct. Once he self-destructed, Su Ming would not be able to get anything yet the others would have the mistaken notion that he was hiding the Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

That was why Su Ming had used his words to deceive him. With this method and with the excuse of luring the white-robed teenager to attack, he slowly made him waste away his essence and... gradually lose his power to self-destruct. At that moment when he could no longer self-destruct, he was so exhausted that he even lost the right to self-destruct.

"Who are you?! There is no way for you to be an unknown person when you're so diabolical!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor roared as madness appeared in his eyes. He gathered his essence without stop, but to his grief realized that he had really wasted most of his essence during the past few days.

"You destroyed my physical body, then lied to me saying that you wanted to lure the Heavenly Centipede here, yet your true goal was always my Nascent Divinity! That Heavenly Centipede didn't even come here!"

Su Ming looked at Flame Fiends' Progenitor without speaking, then his attacks became even fiercer. The speed and rate of burning of the resentful flames around him also became much greater.

This scene was seen by the white-robed teenager hiding in the lava. He was at first uncertain, but that uncertainty was soon followed by a smile. At that moment, greed appeared in his eyes.

'What a diabolical person. He actually used this method to prevent Flame Fiends' Progenitor from self-destructing before he could obtain his Nascent Divinity. This method is incredibly sinister and vicious... but I like it!

'Looks like this isn't a trap. It seems like I've been overthinking it. If that's the case... then I'll let you know that... the words you used to lie to Flame Fiends' Progenitor... are actually real!'

The white-robed teenager's eyes flashed, but he soon forced down the greed in his heart and continued observing them. He was a skeptical person, and unless he was completely certain, he would not appear.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor had anger raging within him, but there was also despair along with it. His madness reached its peak, but by then, he had even lost his right to self-destruct. He knew that if he tried to self-destruct, he would not be able to succeed... but he still wanted to try!

"Even if I die, I still won't become a Vessel Spirit under your control!" As Flame Fiends' Progenitor roared, all his essence swiftly started boiling, and the explosive presence of self-destruction spread out from his body, but right at the instant it happened, Su Ming's eyes shone. With a step forward, his power instantly rose, and he fused with his Ecang clone, but he did not have Long Hai offer his power. Yet even so, it was enough to overpower Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who had lost his physical body.

The resentful flames formed by the Resentful Wei around the area also tumbled back. If anyone looked from the ground, it could be seen that when the resentful fire in the sky tumbled backwards, there were countless shadows of Resentful Weis in them, as if there were endless horses galloping about. In the blink of an eye, they swept towards the self-destructing Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

With a bang, the self-destruction of Flame Fiends' Progenitor and the resentful flames crashed into each other, then he froze. To his grief and despair, he realized that his Nascent Divinity was filled with resentful aura. It came from the charges from the resentful flames during the past few days.

The instant the self-destruction of his Nascent Divinity came to a halt, his body was occupied by the resentful aura. The resentful flames around him surrounded and trapped him in layers, like a seal, and Su Ming closed in on him with a step. He lifted his right hand, and a dazzling light shone in his palm. It was the light from the Soul Sealing Art, the one that belonged to Hua Yu from Xuan Shang's group.

The palm was about to land. Once it did, Flame Fiends' Progenitor would lose his consciousness, and perhaps he would never wake up again. Despair, grief, and madness turned into his last thoughts.

At the instant Su Ming's palm was about to land, a mighty power erupted from the ground, and a ray of white light instantly shot out. It was a centipede that was completely white, and this time, in contrast to the previous black centipede, it exuded a mighty power.

That centipede was so quick that it instantly rushed into the resentful flames. As a long string of laughter echoed in the air, he charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor in front of Su Ming and instantly pounced on him.

Needless to say, that centipede was the white-robed teenager. At that moment, he was completely certain that he... did not fall into a trap!

But did he truly not fall into a trap? Su Ming's lips curled up into a faint smile the moment the white-robed teenager stepped into the resentful flames.

Chapter 995 Peak of Mastery Realm

"Fellow Daoist, please don't bear a grudge against me for this. I'll be kindly accepting this old man's Nascent Divinity." A long string of laughter echoed in the air. The white centipede instantly appeared in front of Su Ming, and he was so quick that it seemed as if while his words were still in the distance, his body had already arrived like an afterimage. He opened his mouth in a hideous fashion to bite into the extremely exhausted Flame Fiends' Progenitor whose Nascent Divinity's essence had already been mostly wasted away.

When Su Ming saw that the white centipede wanted to devour the Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor, a fierce look instantly appeared in his eyes. He had been waiting for this chance for a long, long time, and this cautious as well as cunning

centipede had finally fallen into his trap. This was truly him using Flame Fiends' Progenitor as bait to lure him forward.

So how could he let that centipede just devour him?!

At the instant the piercing cold light shone in Su Ming's eyes, his power erupted in a frenzy. This was the power after Su Ming had his Ecang clone fuse completely with the supreme treasure's body. Under Su Ming's will, Progenitor Long Hai also brought forth all of his power and fused it in, creating the most powerful force Su Ming could muster at that moment!

He was no longer infinitesimally close to the power that belonged to Masters of Fate, Lives and Death. This was... the true power of Mastery Realm, and he was not just a normal Almighty in Mastery Realm. Instead, he had already reached the terrifying power of those at the peak of Mastery Realm!

After all, Progenitor Long Hai was an Almighty who was already near the peak of Mastery Realm. Because of it, when all the other people's power was added into the mix, they could bring forth the peak of Mastery Realm!

It was difficult to call this level of cultivation as being in Mastery Realm. This was already... half a step into Fate Realm! If Su Ming could understand fate, then he would reach the Fate Realm. He would be the same as Heaven Traversers' Progenitor, but his true power could far surpass that of that person.

As for fate... even if Su Ming did not understand it himself, he still had the three-leafed grass, and since this item could let the one thousand feet tree execute the power of fate, then it was naturally the rare type of treasure which had the same effect as Heaven Traversers' legacy treasure.

The body created by Xuan Family's supreme treasure, this extremely powerful, law-defying treasure forced Su Ming to admit that he was tempted. He was not just slightly tempted, but incredibly tempted to obtain it!

The offensive power at the peak of Mastery Realm turned into a mighty pressure, and at the moment it erupted from the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled, wind rose, clouds surged, weather changed, and even the sea of fire that surrounded this world tumbled backwards.

A shocking scene appeared in the sky. The sea of fire tumbled about as if there was an invisible hand that swept it aside, as if the fire in the sky had turned into a veil, and when that hand lifted it, it revealed the sky after the flames had burned it!

The ground trembled furiously. Cracks appeared as it shattered. Booming sounds reverberated ceaselessly in the air, and a large number of volcanoes instantly

collapsed. Lava flowed through the land while roaring, but an invisible gust of wind blew past it, and it instantly froze.

It was as if the world, the sky, and the earth had frozen up under the mighty pressure from the power brought by the peak of Mastery Realm that belonged to the body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled.

Almost at the instant that power erupted from Su Ming, the white centipede who intended to devour Flame Fiends' Progenitor had a swift and drastic change in his expression. Disbelief and shock appeared on his face. Even though Flame Fiends' Progenitor was by his mouth, he instantly felt chilled.

'A trap! This is a trap!'

The centipede was screaming at that moment, but he did not have time to think about it. With one move, he let go of Flame Fiends' Progenitor's Nascent Divinity, which was already by his mouth. Instead, he moved, about to use the speed it was proud of and which even the Almighty in Mastery Realm would have a headache with to instantly escape...

But Su Ming had taken precautions against this. It could be said that the real goal of his trap was to suppress the centipede's speed. How could Su Ming let him escape? Almost the instant the centipede was about to flee, the black resentful flames in the area tumbled backwards with a bang, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor also let out a furious roar to rush towards the white centipede.

The reason why he chose to rush out even though he was in a horrible condition was because Su Ming had said a few words to him at that moment.

"Do you want to make this act real, or make this real thing happening right now into an act?"

The white centipede let out a piercing roar. With one move, he was about to rush out of the resentful fire, but at the instant he touched it, the resentful fire at the spot he touched manifested into the Resentful Wei. It charged straight into the centipede.

Booming sounds surged into the sky. The Resentful Wei let out a loud roar. As it moved back, a powerful hatred appeared in its eyes. The resentment in the two dragon heads was incredibly great, and a great amount of resentful fire burst out.

"Wei... You are the manifestation of Ancient Wei's soul!"

The white centipede was also forced back by the impact and instantly turned into the white-robed teenager. Disbelief appeared on his face, and there was even a distorted tone in his piercing voice.

His expression changed drastically. He had harbored incredible hate towards Su Ming's black horse earlier but was unable to find the source of that hate. Yet during the clash just then, both of their presences were forced out of their bodies. Because of that, he immediately found the source of his hatred.

This was... Ancient Wei's presence. It was an ancient arch nemesis that had hidden since the beginning of time in the white-robed teenager's blood!

The three ancient kingdoms had waged constant war. Their hatred towards each other was branded into their people's souls, and as it was transferred through generation after generation, their descendants fought and killed each other generation after generation. If they did not destroy the others' country, they would definitely not stop!

"You are... a Resentful Wei!" The white-robed teenager's expression was incredibly sour. There was also madness on his face. He could not see any flaws in this situation. It had been his greed that tempted him to step into this trap.

In truth, even though the Resentful Wei was also in Mastery Realm, it was an inferior life form compared to the white-robed teenager. After all, the white-robed teenager could take human form, while the Resentful Wei could not. After all, the teenager possessed the blood of Ancient Wu, while the Resentful Wei was a life form formed by Ancient Wei's resentment.

However, during the battle Su Ming had waged for the past few days, the Resentful Wei had executed its power continuously. It had already changed the laws in this place. As they changed and the Resentful Wei burned the area, it could be said that a powerful prison had been formed in the place.

It would have been fine if that jail had been left alone, but once it started shrinking, then even with the white-robed teenager's speed, he would not be able to rush out within a short amount of time. At the instant he moved back, Flame Fiends' Progenitor pounced on him. The madness on his face was no less than that on the white-robed teenager. When he rushed out, there was a look on him that made it seem as if he wanted to die together with him.

Su Ming had made his point very clear with his words just then. If he did not take action, then he would make the conclusion to make the act real! After such words, how would the old man not use his full strength? Even if he was already extremely exhausted, he still rushed out as if he had gone mad.

There was also bitterness in his heart. He knew that he had completely outclassed by Su Ming this time. If the white-robed teenager had insisted on not coming out, then he would have ended up truly dead.

Even if the white-robed teenager appeared and he obtained his physical body, since he had already used up too much essence of his Nascent Divinity, he wouldn't be able to

have his full power erupt for a short period of time. At the very least, while he was in the fifth kiln, he would only... be able to bring out power that was little different from his Nascent Divinity.

It could be said that Su Ming had not suffered any losses in this battle, but had obtained a great amount, and due to the situation that he had planned, he seized the upper hand. No matter how things developed, he would definitely not suffer any losses.

'These sorts of schemes, these kinds of diabolical plans... This person doesn't even bother with principles, and he's not a kind and merciful person. He's one of the fiendish, demonic, heartless people who are temperamental and suddenly turn hostile. Why did I think about provoking him? Damn it, I'll definitely not provoke this person again!'

In bitterness, wariness rose in Flame Fiends' Progenitor towards Su Ming. It even surpassed what he felt when Su Ming had destroyed his physical body. That wariness and respect that came from his heart and soul made him unable to harbor any intentions to exact revenge on Su Ming at all.

He did not dare.

The madness within Flame Fiends' Progenitor and his desperation caused the white-robed teenager to be unable to help but freeze for a moment.

If that was just this, then it would not have been able to make the white-robed teenager to descend into frenzy, but Su Ming exuded power that belonged to those in the peak of Mastery Realm at that moment, and it was enough to make the white-robed teenager break down in this situation.

At the instant he was held back by Flame Fiends' Progenitor, Su Ming lifted his right hand and threw a simple punch forward, but that punch was a punch that belonged to those in the peak of Mastery Realm.

The world crumbled, and all things in the world roared. The volcanoes on the ground shattered. The vortices in the sky looked as if space had been shattered. At the instant the punch was hurled forward, it brought about a great sense of danger to the white-robed teenager. He wanted to dodge, but Flame Fiends' Progenitor held him back in a frenzy, and the resentful fire from the Resentful Wei shrank and closed in while tumbling about and surging into the sky. The loud bangs caused the white-robed teenager to let out an indignant roar in despair.

Su Ming's punch landed on the air in front of the white-robed teenager. As the air distorted, the youth coughed up a large mouthful of blood, and as his body tumbled backwards, Flame Fiends' Progenitor remained stuck to him. He instantly burned up. The Resentful Wei closed in, its resentment surrounding the youth like venom, and it corroded his body, inside and out.

"Fellow Daoist, please forgive me. I've been reckless in this, but I only wanted to kill this damn Flame Fiends' Progenitor. I didn't have any form of hostility towards you. Fellow Daoist, could you let me go this once? I'll remember this for the rest of my life and will definitely repay you!" the white-robed teenage said swiftly with a pleading look in his eyes as he moved back in a disheveled state. His whole body was enveloped in flames and resentful aura. His skin withered, and black spots appeared on it.

What answered him were not words. Instead, with an aloof expression, Su Ming took a step forward, then lifted his right hand and struck with his palm to deliver an attack that caused the world to roar as if it was going to crumble!

A strike... in Mastery Realm!

It was a palm that covered the entire sky and earth. It manifested in front of Su Ming, then swept through the sky as well as the ground. With a presence that could destroy everything, it aimed to destroy the world.

"There's no enmity between us, yet you really intend to kill me?!"

The white-robed teenager retreated swiftly, but he could not escape from Flame Fiends' Progenitor's frenzied pursuit and the attacks from the resentful fire behind him.

"No enmity?" Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes, and his right hand swung down.

Chapter 996 Ancient Wu Shocks the World

"You're pushing this too far!"

Once the white-robed teenager heard Su Ming's words, he was momentarily stunned, then he lifted his hands to strike his chest while roaring madly. This strike caused his bones to let out cracking sounds.

"Blood of Ancient Wu, I call upon the spirits of my ancestors to descend on me, and I will burn my blood to inscribe the will of Wu on me!" The white-robed teenager threw his head back and roared. At the instant he did so, the sky became cloudy.

Tumbling fog could be faintly seen above. It spun around in the mid of loud booms, until it turned into a gigantic vortex that replaced the sky. It didn't stop spinning then, and a vast, mighty pressure descended on the ground.

Soon, a gigantic golden pillar of light that was thousands of feet wide and born in an unknown place came out of the vortex. It descended on the ground to envelop the white-robed teenager.

At the same time, Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a shrill scream of pain. His body started tumbling backwards as if it was evaporating. Only when he retreated thousands of feet back did he stop disintegrating. Fear appeared on his face. It was a look of pure terror.

He could clearly feel that there was a horrifying power within the golden light that appeared just then, and it was a power that could even kill Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death.

Thankfully, its area of effect was not big, or else Flame Fiends' Progenitor would have definitely died.

As for the Resentful Wei, under that golden light, a large amount of black smoke started spreading out from its body. Once the smoke distorted, it turned into indistinct figures. They lifted their heads and let out soundless screams towards that golden light.

The figures might look indistinct, but the hatred in them was obvious at first glance, as well as the golden light's disgust and madness.

The hatred was especially deep in the Resentful Wei. It roared towards the golden light and looked like it wanted to crush whatever was at its end!

Su Ming shuddered. When the golden light enveloped him, a cold chill filled his heart. That chill came from the golden light and seemed to be able to seal even a soul. However, Su Ming's current body possessed the offensive powers of those in the peak of Mastery Realm. He retreated one thousand feet away.

But even if he retreated, shrill screams of pain from Xuan Shang and his group rang out within the body of the supreme treasure. Just being enveloped by the golden light for a moment had severely injured their hearts and souls.

Brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his head and looked at the foggy vortex in the sky, from which the golden light was coming.

"I burn my blood and borrow the power of the ancient kingdom. Spirit of Wu, descend on me!"

As the white-robed teenager in the golden light roared madly, his body started withering swiftly while numerous veins popped up on his skin. Bumps swam about within them. It was all the blood in his body tumbling about, as he was swiftly turning gold.

In a dimension at the third border within the fifth kiln was Reverend Zi Long sitting cross-legged on a meadow. There were endless weeds swaying around him. The sky was black, but it was this black sky that caused the weeds to exude a boundless, bizarre air amid the rustling sounds.

Reverend Zi Long's expression was calm. The moment the golden light appeared, the black sky was replaced by gold. It illuminated most of the land. Shrill screams of pain instantly rang out in the air, and it could be seen that there were spiders the size of a fist in the weeds.

They disintegrated under the golden light. Screams of pain reverberated in the air, but it did not attract any attention from Reverend Zi Long. He stared at the sky. He had already stood up, and as the emotions in his eyes changed swiftly, he sucked in a deep breath.

"The power of Ancient Wu... Who... forced fellow Daoist Wu into such a pathetic state that he would spare no pains in burning his soul to borrow the power of the spirits of Ancient Wu?!"

At the same time but in a different dimension, the yellow-browed man was striding forward on the ground. A large number of ferocious beasts in the shape of bears were in front of him, but the man was not bothered by them. Wherever he went, the skulls of the ferocious beasts would be crushed. Their brains would gush out and fly towards the man. When he sucked in a breath, their brains would all be sucked into his mouth.

He was chewing when the sky suddenly brightened and a piercing golden light swiftly covered it. This golden light was very distinct and did not dissipate. The yellow-browed man's footsteps came to a swift halt, and when he lifted his head, his expression instantly turned incomparably grim.

"The power of Ancient Wu..."

At the same time, Zhu You Cai was about to step out of a dimension through the exit when his gaze was attracted by the golden light that suddenly appeared in the sky. When he looked at it, his body swiftly came to a halt. His expression changed constantly, and he fell silent without saying a word.

If this was just a drastic change in the fifth kiln, it would not have caught others' attention, but now... a powerful golden light had completely enveloped the fifth kiln. That golden light that was sent into the kiln... had come this way!

The direction from which the golden light came was not the depths of the galaxy, but from above it!

It came from above the endless galaxy!

Because of it, it wasn't just a few people who saw the golden light. Even though Dust Burners had disappeared from the galaxy, they were still around. Thus, they saw the golden light descending from above the galaxy. They also sensed a powerful, mighty pressure coming from within it.

Dust Burners, Virtue Rooters, and even Reng Wu Race saw that golden light.

Deeper into the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean were countless ferocious beasts. They were hiding from the sea of fire formed by the fifth kiln, but the instant they saw the golden light in the galaxy, their hearts were in shock.

Those in the region between the inner part and the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean also saw it. In fact, the tribe members of Ninth Tribe also saw the golden light while they were in the region in the periphery!

It was a pillar of light swiftly descending from above the galaxy, like a straight line!

In fact, those in Black Ink Planet could also see it clearly. Even the... forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping watch over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence could see it!

Within the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were the Almightyies who were in isolation all year long. At that moment, they walked out of their training grounds, and when they looked at the golden light, different expressions appeared on their faces.

"This is the power of Ancient Wu from fellow Daoist Wu..."

"What sort of danger did he run into that he brought the Ancient Wu's spirit here? Based on what I know, when he uses this power, he is unable to handle it. His blood is... too thin."

Farther away was the territory beyond the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. The people there could not see the golden light, but if there were those who had sent their divine senses into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and pushed them continuously upwards, then based on different levels of cultivation... perhaps there would be some who could see the end point.

The spot where the golden light came from was the end of the area above the galaxy. Over there... was a foggy vortex. It was the exact same as the one seen in the fifth kiln. If there was anyone who had enough power, then perhaps their divine sense would allow them to see through the end of the vortex above the galaxy, and... a new galaxy there.

That was the galaxy... that belonged to the three Ancient Kingdoms.

The golden light came from the galaxy that belonged to Ancient Wu. The source... was a planet in the shape of a pentagram located at the edge. At the center of this planet... was a gigantic blade that was pushed into the planet!

Golden light shone through the entire blade. Under it was a centipede's carcass that was the size of three fingers' breadth. It had long withered away and was now lying there without moving.

It was the blade's light that shone through the endless space and descended on the fifth kiln. In the world where Su Ming was at that moment, he saw with his own eyes the white-robed teenager's body turn golden under the light. A fathomless, mighty pressure continuously grew stronger within him.

"The power of Ancient Wu..." Su Ming's eyes shrank. His expression was calm as he frowned when looking at the ground. He had noticed faintly that there seemed to be a presence waking up down below.

In the depths of the endless volcanoes was a world that was rarely ventured into, and was one that Su Ming hadn't noticed even after he'd been fighting against Huo Kui for several days.

It was an underground maze formed by countless tunnels densely packed together. In the depths of it was an incredibly spacious cave.

This place was completely dark. But if there had been light there, then it could be seen that... Fire Spirits were sleeping there while a weak wave of heat exuded from their bodies, but there was no light coming from them!

They overlapped one another. There was no end to them, possibly tens of thousands of them packed together. There were big ones and small ones among them, and there were even those who exuded the presence akin to those who were Masters of Fate. This was... clearly a Fire Spirits' nest!

In the depths of this underground cave where tens of thousands of Fire Spirits slept was a skeleton that laid at the end of the cave. This skeleton leaned against the wall, and no one could tell how many years it had been since its owner had died. His robes had decayed, leaving only his bones.

But not even the skeleton remained whole. Only his upper half was left. In one of the hand's was a long, purple spear. Even if this person had died, they still held the spear tightly in their hand.

This bizarre cave, peculiar skeleton, and the spear in the skeleton's hand were hidden in the depths of the ground. No one could say how many years they had gone unnoticed by others, since no one ever came to this place.

Yet at that moment, as the golden light descended on the ground, the originally dark underground cave was lit up by a golden light. It shone through the ceiling above, immediately illuminating the whole cave.

To the living creatures who were used to darkness, the light was incredibly piercing to the eyes. Almost at the instant it appeared, the countless Fire Spirits in the underground cave swiftly began roaring. When they opened their eyes, there was ruthlessness within them. Gradually, the roars became louder and stronger, and when all the Fire Spirits had opened their eyes, their roars reverberated through the whole underground cave.

What Su Ming noticed was the presence of the Fire Spirits waking up!

Almost at the instant that happened, the expression of the white-robed teenager that was enveloped in golden light in front of Su Ming twisted. Unbearable pain appeared on his face. Seven-tenths of his body had turned gold, and even his eyes gained that shade. At the moment, he was glaring at Su Ming with madness shining in his gaze.

He lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the golden light above him.

"Lend me the ancient power to crack the heavens and split the earth!"

Chapter 997 I Promised

As the white-robed teenager seized the golden light, it started distorting. At the same time, endless ripples stirred up. Immediately, the shadow of the golden blade appeared clearly in the white-robed teenager's hands.

When Su Ming looked over, it looked like the white-robed teenager had extracted the shadow of the golden blade straight from the golden light. Once it took shape, a great mighty pressure so powerful it was impossible to put to words descended on the ground with a bang. A loud bang rang out in Flame Fiends' Progenitor's body, and his Nascent Divinity plummeted to the ground as if it had been pushed to the ground by the mighty pressure that seemed to have gained corporeal form. He could not move an inch. His Nascent Divinity also started showing signs of disintegrating, which caused his expression to change to one of shock.

The body of the supreme treasure Su Ming controlled also shuddered under the mighty pressure. He began descending slowly, as if the entire universe was collapsing and its weight was pressed on his body. It pushed him to the ground until his feet sank into the earth.

All forms of life had to bow down and worship before this mighty pressure. If they did not, their bodies and souls would be destroyed. Su Ming remained standing with strenuous effort, his head raised to stare at the white-robed teenager in the sky. A cold glare appeared in his eyes.

The only being who was mostly unaffected by the mighty pressure was... the Resentful Wei.

This two dragon-headed black horse let out a roar filled with a sinister tone the moment the power of Ancient Wu from the white-robed teenager descended. This roar echoed in the air and turned into thick, black smoke around the black horse. As it distorted, it turned into indistinct figures. The shapes of these figures could not be seen clearly, but based on their outlines, it could be guessed that they were men and women, the elderly and the young. As if they had gone mad, they roared at the golden light around the white-robed teenager and the golden blade in his hands.

A hatred that even mortals could sense gushed out of the Resentful Wei's without restraint and it seemed to want to fight against the golden light.

"Crack the Heavens!"

The white-robed teenager had now mostly turned gold. He lifted the golden blade in his hands with much difficulty and cut down at the ground. It could be seen that this slash put a huge strain on him.

His body instantly turned incomparably thin, as if all his flesh, blood, essence, and even his soul had turned into the source to execute this one slash from the blade.

As he swung the blade down, the ground beneath Su Ming's feet immediately roared, and cracks appeared on it. His feet sank in deeper because of the mighty pressure, so only half his body remained above the ground. That mighty pressure caused all of Su Ming's blood to freeze, and this was when he possessed the body of the supreme treasure. If he did not have it and the mighty pressure was not divided among the people in the body, then even his Ecang clone would have almost shattered under the mighty pressure.

After all, Su Ming's Ecang was incomplete.

This slash was not aimed at Su Ming, but the roaring Resentful Wei beside him, and Su Ming could see clearly that since the color of the white-robed teenager was replaced by gold, he showed a spark of consciousness that did not seem to belong to him. Instead, it was a gaze of someone who regarded themselves superior to all, who looked down on the universe as if it was an ant.

"Filthy ants of Lower Realm, thou dost dare fight against the mighty Wu?"

The voice tumbling out of the white-robed teenager's mouth had a strange rhythm to it, along with a cold, merciless gaze that made him seem as if he was standing above the nine heavens and looking down at the universe.

It did not matter whether he was looking at Huo Kui or Su Ming, he regarded them the same. Only when he looked at the Resentful Wei did a grim look appear on his face, as if this Resentful Wei was the only thing worthy of his attention and could be regarded as an equal.

"An Immortal from the Higher Kingdoms!"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor shuddered. There was also a quiver in his voice. His words might have been faint, but Su Ming could still hear them. At the instant he did so, the freezing glare in his eyes became even colder.

The people from the three Ancient Kingdoms were indeed known as Immortals from the Higher Kingdoms in the eyes of the people from the four Great True Worlds.

With one slash, the youth cut through the sky, and the slash turned into a dazzling ray of golden light. There was an indescribable ray contained within it. This light was as breathtaking as the light that split apart space when the universe was born. It was the divine ability: Crack the Heavens!

That one slash contained the power to tear open the chaos in space, to turn the heavy parts into the earth and the light parts into the power of the sky. Even though the white-robed teenager could not bring forth the full power of the slash, but by activating the power of Ancient Wu within his blood, he still managed to bring forth a certain amount of power from the blade.

This was a divine ability that the white-robed teenager had to cast with his life. He could only burn his blood once in his life, so once he died, he would definitely die, but even if he died, he still wanted to burn his blood and reach his peak, to activate the pride of Ancient Wu in his blood.

With one slash, the weather changed. The dimension where Su Ming was instantly fell silent. Flame Fiends' Progenitor shuddered. The ruthless and rampaging Fire Spirits in the ground also fell silent at that instant.

It was not just them. All the living beings in the fifth kiln, even the one thousand feet tall tree, sensed the might of Ancient Wu cracking the heavens.

Reverend Zi Long's expression turned dark. He still stood on the meadow and looked at the sky. His expression continued changing, but after a long while, he sighed. He knew that the white-robed teenager would definitely die.

"It's a pity that we didn't manage to go through with our alliance. If that's the case, I might really have to work together with Huang Mei for the supreme treasures later." Zi Long shook his head.

In another dimension, the yellow-browed man frowned. When he looked at the gold hue in the sky, a hint of wariness shone in his eyes.

"I didn't expect that the fellow with the blood of Ancient Wu would be able to bring forth such offensive power..."

Su Ming stared intently at the slash the white-robed teenager executed. His body was forcefully suppressed by the mighty pressure, which enveloped him in a way that he was unable to move even a single inch. He could only watch helplessly as the golden blade went charging at the Resentful Wei.

As for the black horse, as it roared, the black smoke around its body started spinning. It turned into a vortex that looked like a black hole.

In the face of the incoming slash that cracked the heavens, the Resentful Wei did not retreat. Instead, it charged forward.

But before it did so, it turned its head around to cast a glance at Su Ming, who was suppressed on the ground and unable to move. In that one glance was a farewell. When the black horse turned its head back, it had already turned into a black shooting star that rushed at the golden blade that cracked the heavens.

This was its mission. It was the brand formed by the resentful aura from Ancient Wei left in its soul. The resent towards the universe reached its peak when it saw a blood descendant of Ancient Wu. It wanted to rush out and fight against him!

Su Ming saw the Resentful Wei cast that look, the farewell within it, and his heart trembled. Faint hints of red then appeared in his eyes. He remembered his promise to the Resentful Wei!

"Resentful Wei, from now on, I will kill all living beings who want to kill you. This is the promise I made with you, and it is my promise to the whole universe!"

"My promise..."

The red deepened in Su Ming's eyes. His heart was trembling, his soul boiling, and all the willpower in his body fighting furiously against the mighty pressure that came from the outer world.

At that moment, a violent bang rang out in the world, as if it wanted to separate the world again. It reverberated through the area, and it was the sound of the golden blade that could crack the heavens crashing against the black shooting star that was the Resentful Wei.

As booming sounds echoed in the air, the Resentful Wei fell backwards. Its body was forcefully sliced apart in midair, and amid the loud bangs, it turned into black smoke. Quite a large part of it instantly dissipated, while the remaining part gathered together to turn into the Resentful Wei. Its body was filled with injuries, and it was a startling sight to behold. The presence spreading out from it was also incredibly faint and weak.

A thick aura of death surrounded the black horse.

As for the golden blade, it paused for a moment in mid air. The golden light became weaker, but its attack did now slow down. With the white-robed teenager holding onto it, it slashed down at the Resentful Wei again.

Su Ming's body trembled furiously. A low roar came from his mouth, and it was as loud as a clap of thunder. He had made a promise with the Resentful Wei, and he would fulfill that promise!

Even if the price was too great, but since he made that promise, he could not just let the Resentful Wei bear the attack executed by the white-robed teenager when he was in no danger. After all, the white-robed teenager would die soon after, and Su Ming would win just like that.

However, while other people might hesitate before they chose to interfere with this, Su Ming would definitely not do so!

He could not rush out with the body of the supreme treasure under the mighty pressure, but he still had his methods. At the instant the slash that cracked heaven from the golden blade charged with its remaining might towards the nearly dead Resentful Wei, Su Ming sent forth a thought to Xuan Shang, one so firm that it allowed no one to refuse him.

"Open the body of the supreme treasure, I want to go out!"

Almost at the instant Su Ming mentioned that, a huge force erupted with a bang from his soul within the body of the supreme treasure, causing Xuan Shang's mind to tremble and immediately choose to obey him. However, he did not dissolve the body of the supreme treasure. He only nullified the connection between Su Ming and the body.

At the moment he did so, a powerful light suddenly flashed between the brows of the body formed by the supreme treasure. As it shone, overlapping shadows immediately appeared. Su Ming's real body stepped out of them in one step.

At the instant he walked out, the mighty pressure descended on him with a bang. Su Ming lifted his right hand and clenched his fist. Within it, there was a certain creature.

It was... the poisonous wasp that contained the God Ascension Nectar.

The stinger from the wasp was already out. When Su Ming clenched his fist, no one noticed anything unusual about it. But right then, the stinger pierced his palm. Poison that was fused with the God Ascension Nectar instantly surged into his body.

Su Ming felt as if his heart was going to burst. During that instant, as a loud bang rang out in his mind, the blood in his body started boiling. As the God Ascension Nectar swam through his blood, veins popped up on Su Ming's face while he fought against the mighty pressure from the sky.

Chapter 998 Stand Till the End

As Su Ming resisted it, intense pain shot through his body. That indescribable pain came from his body being crushed and his soul tearing under the pressure.

There were certain times when pain was the source of a person's madness, and it was the case for Su Ming at that moment. The more pain he felt, the more bloodshot his eyes became, and the more the God Ascension Nectar in his body fused with his blood.

"Ecang!"

At that moment, Su Ming no longer cared about whether he would expose himself. He had made a promise with the Resentful Wei, and he would definitely deliver on it!

When Su Ming said the word, his Ecang clone let out a projection with a bang, and under it, Su Ming rushed forward swiftly. With it, he crashed into the mighty pressure.

With a bang, Su Ming coughed up blood. The Ecang projection that appeared behind him crumbled, but this collapse completed the arrival of the Ecang clone. Once it appeared and fused with Su Ming, his strongest offensive power erupted from his body, and he took a step forward again.

This step immediately caused cracks to appear on his body. Blood covered every inch of him, but as he threw his head back to laugh, he did not bother to wipe away the blood at the corners of his mouth. Instead, he summoned the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole!

When it fused with him, Su Ming's physical strength reached its strongest. When he took a step forward again, the sky roared. He coughed up a large mouthful of blood, and his vision became blurry. By then, he had already turned into a blood-soaked person.

A thick fragrance from the God Ascension Nectar spread out. Under the stimulation provided by the nectar in his broken body, he started rapidly recovering. An abundance of life force filled him. It felt as if even if he was a dead person, this life force would bring him back.

The God Ascension Nectar, his Ecang clone, and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole allowed Su Ming to take his fourth step forward. All of this might seem to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, only a few breaths had passed since the moment Su Ming appeared to the instant he took his fourth step. At that moment, when the fourth step landed, he appeared right in front of the incredibly exhausted and nearly dead Resentful Wei!

Su Ming stood by it while drenched in blood. At that moment, he looked as if he had turned into a blazing sun, causing everyone's gazes to be unconsciously attracted to him.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was already struck dumb. His mind was blank. As he looked at Su Ming and his unfamiliar face, he instinctively looked at the body of the supreme treasure, and soon seemed to come to a vague understanding.

The moment he grasped it, his body was stimulated by Ecang's presence spreading out of Su Ming's body and the God Ascension Nectar. It caused his breathing to quicken, and disbelief appeared on his face.

The sight of Su Ming fighting back head-on against the mighty pressure caused a storm in his heart.

The people in the body formed by the supreme treasure were also in shock. Xu Hui was relatively calm, but Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu's expressions had turned into a mess. They originally thought Su Ming was very powerful, but when they looked over at him at the moment, all of their previous impressions of him were overturned.

It was especially so for Progenitor Long Hai. His eyes sparkled brightly. He might have been able to tell that this body was formed by the Xuan Family's supreme treasure, but he did not manage to tell that there were so many secrets contained in Su Ming's body.

As for that God Ascension Nectar, even he desired it.

While standing in front of the Resentful Wei, Su Ming lifted his head to look at the golden blade the white-robed teenager had swung down with much difficulty. He did not know that the Resentful Wei was looking at his back quietly at that moment.

Just then, when it cast that one glance, Su Ming had remembered his promise.

As the Resentful Wei stared at Su Ming, he also remembered the promise he was given. At the moment, Su Ming was using his actions to fulfill that promise, even if the price for it was incredibly great.

Su Ming's appearance caused the now golden-eyed white-robed teenager's pupils to shrink, but the golden blade slicing down did not stop. It charged towards Su Ming, who threw his head back and roared. Even if his body was about to shatter, he still lifted his left hand, then formed a seal and pointed at the incoming blade.

With it came Su Ming's greatest Origin divine ability—winter, autumn, summer, spring!

The Art of his Life Matrix—the flames of summer brought forth a thick sea of fire that instantly erupted from the blood of Su Ming's body. They fused into his left index finger, which then turned into a fire finger that pointed at the incoming golden blade.

This finger contained Su Ming's determination, his promise, and the explosive charge of his willpower. At the instant it crashed into the golden blade, the world roared!

Loud booms shook the sky and earth and turned into an impact that swept through all directions. Su Ming coughed up blood and retreated, but forced himself to stop in front of the Resentful Wei. His face was pale and he trembled, but the light from the golden blade had grown weaker again. However, it still continued drawing closer.

At that moment, Su Ming was already severely injured. If he did not have the God Ascension Nectar with him, even if he had not died from the slash just then, he would have definitely been unable to stand up.

However, he the God Ascension Nectar, which allowed him to stand up. Its domineering power was a force that would allow a person to possess life force no matter what condition their bodies were in.

In fact, it could even be seen that the God Ascension Nectar had formed thin threads in Su Ming's body and connected it together. If anyone could within it, they would realize that there were countless injuries to his organs and even his soul, but they were all connected by the power of the God Ascension Nectar.

This was the God Ascension Nectar!

Su Ming could not retreat. Behind him was the Resentful Wei, whom he had promised to protect no matter what. At the instant the golden blade came forth, Su Ming closed his eyes, then lifted his right hand to point at the sky, and pushed his left hand at the ground.

"That which exists between the past and the future is Destiny!"

This was a divine ability that he had not used for a long time. A purple-haired man immediately appeared above him, and beneath his left hand was an infant with his eyes closed.

Once these two figures overlapped with Su Ming's body, a ripple of power erupted with a bang from his body, causing his hair to fly. His appearance instantly changed to that of a seven- or eight-year-old child. He rushed out swiftly and charged towards the incoming golden blade.

The boy Su Ming turned into lifted his right hand to form a seal and pointed forward. Immediately, the golden blade looked as if it had stopped in midair, then as if it had sliced apart space itself, it let out a loud bang and charged towards Su Ming once more.

Su Ming tumbled backwards and coughed up blood again. The injuries on his body grew even more severe, but the previous test had allowed him to know that he could not change the trajectory of time for the golden blade!

However, during this battle, the white-robed teenager had been reduced to mere skin and bones. He was so thin that he looked as if he was going to die if wind blew against him. An incredibly thick aura of death surrounded his body. That aura of death spread out to bear witness to him walking swiftly towards death.

The youth glared at Su Ming. The hand holding onto the blade was already trembling, and he was gritting his teeth to persevere.

This was a battle where the first to fall would be the first to die!

When Su Ming moved back, blood capillaries filled his eyes, and a hint of madness appeared about him. His transformation into Destiny did not have any effect. Then... what would happen if he went through another transformation while he was Destiny?!

Su Ming had thought about this before, but he had never tried it. However, he wanted to try it right then.

As he moved back, he stopped once again in front of the Resentful Wei. Then, Su Ming lifted his head and closed his eyes. With his right hand lifted towards the sky while his left hand was lowered to the ground, he once again... executed the transformation into Destiny!

"That which exists between the past and the future is the present!"

Su Ming's voice was hoarse when he spoke. The moment his body went through the transformation into Destiny again, pain that surpassed what Su Ming had ever experienced was suddenly reflected on his face, and he threw his head back to roar.

As he did so, a large part of his skin cracked. Fresh blood gushed out of his body, but a presence that had never come from Su Ming's body erupted.

The explosive charge of this presence caused Su Ming's hair to instantly turn white. As his face charged, he turned into a teenager of about thirteen- to fourteen-years-old from a child of seven- to eight-years-old. The powerful presence about him lashed against the world. When Su Ming opened his eyes, there was an aloof look within them.

Three breaths!

At the instant Su Ming went through the second transformation of Destiny, he immediately gained an epiphany. He knew that he only had three breaths in the second transformation. However, within these three breaths, the offensive power he could bring forth...

... was no longer below Mastery Realm. He could execute... the power of Mastery Realm!

When Su Ming moved forward, he instantly closed in on the white-robed teenager, and booming sounds instantly echoed in the air. Two breaths later, when the two of them fell backwards, Su Ming stopped once more in front of the Resentful Wei. A decaying presence spread out of his body, and his appearance instantly changed. When he turned into his original self, his body trembled and he coughed up blood as if he was about to fall over.

When he looked at the white-robed teenager, he saw that when he was forced back, he also coughed up blood. The golden hue on his body was disappearing right before his eyes. The golden blade in his hand was also turning into golden light. By the looks of it, it was about to dissipate.

As the youth laughed brokenly, a bit of the white-robed teenager's consciousness seemed to have returned to him. The golden hue in his eyes had already become so faint that it could barely be seen. The burning of his blood had reached its end.

"I... still have one skill left... Split the Earth!" The white-robed teenager swung the golden blade that was about to dissipate, having forced himself to gather up his final strength.

Su Ming's pupils shrank. When he sucked in a deep breath, he prepared himself to summon the Sand Spirit.

He could still summon the Sand Spirit twice. Su Ming did not want to use it so easily; if he could afford not to use it, he intended not to use it. Yet if the white-robed teenager still had strength in him to fight, Su Ming would have to summon the Sand Spirit.

But the moment the white-robed teenager lifted the blade, it suddenly disintegrated. A confused look appeared on the youth's face. His body trembled, and his presence disappeared without a trace. He... plummeted to the ground.

He had already burned all of his blood. As he plummeted, the golden light within his body completely disappeared. Even what was beyond the fifth kiln in the world outside had also vanished completely.

The battle ended with the white-robed teenager burning all his blood. Su Ming... won, but his victory did not mean that he was stronger than the white-robed teenager. Instead, due to the existence of the God Ascension Nectar, he could last longer, and this fight was one where the one who could last till the end would win!

But at the instant the white-robed teenager plummeted to the ground, before Su Ming could relax, the ground roared. A huge crack tore through the earth. Countless Fire

Spirits that seemed to have been suppressed for a long time surged out from the crack. In the blink of an eye, they filled the entire area.

Chapter 999 A Chessboard

The appearance of the Fire Spirits instantly caused the world to turn fire red. The seething sea of fire, the high temperature, the ruthless expressions on the Fire Spirits, and the mighty pressure coming from their sheer numbers instantly caused the hearts of all people to tremble!

The corpse of the white-robed teenager with the blood of Ancient Wu fell in the region where the crack had formed on the ground. Almost at the instant the Fire Spirits surged up and their roars reverberated in the air in a shocking manner, his corpse vanished without a trace deep in the crevice.

No one dared to chase after him to search for him. Even the expression Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed the instant he saw that large number of Fire Spirits. Since he longed greatly for the white-robed teenager's corpse, he would have gone right after if the Fire Spirits were just normal ones. But among them, there were around a dozen who were nearly Almighties in Mastery Realm. They... were the reason why everyone's expressions changed.

Roars echoed in the air, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had his Nascent Divinity shrink. A large amount of flames instantly shot out from it. They enveloped his entire body, and he did not dare move a single inch. Based on his experience, this method was not really effective when there was no one else around him, but if there had been someone, he might escape death.

After all, the element spreading out from his body was also fire.

Su Ming's eyes shrank. At that moment, he was already like the last embers of a dying flame. There was no way he could hide. The only thing he could do was to use his fastest speed to take a few steps backwards. He swung his arm and put away the severely injured Resentful Wei into his storage bag.

Almost at the instant he finished doing this, the large number of Fire Spirits that had surged out split into two parts. One of them charged towards the body of the supreme treasure, while the other came roaring after Su Ming.

Before the ruthless expressions, ferocious gazes, and endless sea of fire spreading out of their bodies closed in, the ground looked as if it was about to melt from the heat. This was a fire that could burn a world!

During that moment of danger, after Su Ming gritted his teeth and put away the Resentful Wei, he prepared himself to summon the Sand Spirit to neutralize this impending disaster. But suddenly, he saw a scene that caused his gaze to focus and a strange expression to instantly appear on his face.

The Fire Spirits who were charging towards him came to an abrupt halt in midair once he put away the Resentful Wei, as if they had charged towards him because of the black horse. Right then, no traces of the Resentful Wei could be found, so as if they could not see Su Ming, they turned their to look around, then their expressions regained their ruthlessness. As they roared... they rushed towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor who was enveloped in flames in hopes to pass off as a ball of fire.

The pupils of Flame Fiends' Progenitor shrank, and he immediately began cursing. He had used this method many times to lie his way through disasters, but this time, much to his grievance, he realized that even though Su Ming was standing in midair, those Fire Spirits... did not even spare him a glance. This matter caused Flame Fiends' Progenitor to feel aggrieved, but at the same time, he did not have time to think too much about it. In a flash, he turned into a long arc that escaped into the distance.

There was the sound of air being sliced, and a large number of Fire Spirits rushed madly after Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

After Su Ming had left the body of the supreme treasure, Xuan Shang had become the main soul once more. When the Fire Spirits closed in on him, his heart shuddered, and he instantly had the body of the supreme body to shoot up from the ground. He turned into a long arc and fled into the distance. Like before, a portion of the Fire Spirits split up to chase after him like a swarm of bees.

Su Ming was momentarily stunned, because all of that had happened in the span of a few breaths. The Fire Spirits had surged into the sky and filled it in the start, but in an instant, the land became empty... All the Fire Spirits had split up to chase after Flame Fiends' Progenitor and the body of the supreme treasure, but they did not come after Su Ming, as if they didn't care for him at all...

Su Ming blinked. He remembered his previous assumption: It seemed like the Fire Spirits in this land did not harbor any hostility towards him.

A faint glint shone in his eyes, then he looked towards the crack in the distance. He did not act rashly, but instead sat down cross-legged and began circulating his cultivation base to swiftly heal himself.

After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, Su Ming opened his eyes. He managed to suppress some of the injuries in his body, and without any hesitation, he charged into the crack on the ground. He did not care about the white-robed teenager's corpse, but he cared about his storage bag... because the catwoman was clearly in it.

The reason behind why the situation in which either he or the white-robed teenager had to die was in truth caused by the catwoman. Even though she did not have much of a connection with Su Ming, but he had taken over everything that belonged to Dao Kong, and that catwoman had thus become one of his subordinates. Because of that, there was no way he would allow her to be used as a blood source.

The crack was very big, and it was dark inside. The area was incredibly spacious. At full speed, Su Ming charged into the depths. Before long, when he stepped into the bottom most layer of the crack, his pupils constricted, and he began observing the area around him carefully.

This was a secret tunnel, but the crack above it had allowed the Fire Spirits to rush out. When he looked around him, his gaze landed in the distance, where the white-robed teenager's corpse lay unmoving.

While walking closer, Su Ming stared at the white-robed teenager, whose eyes were still open, but had long become dull and lifeless, and who had died without peace. A cold sneer curled up on his lips.

"You are the first Almighty I killed, but you definitely won't be the last."

Su Ming swung his right hand, and the white-robed teenager's storage bag flew out to him. Once he caught it, he scanned it with his Atman. Due to the white-robed teenager's death, his storage bag had become an item without an owner. With his Atman, Su Ming immediately saw the catwoman sealed inside. She was unconscious at the moment. There was a mark of a centipede at the center of her brows, which was slowly fading away.

Su Ming stared at it, then his eyes shone suddenly. Without batting an eyelid, he patted the white-robed teenager's corpse with his right hand, and immediately, he put away his corpse. Only once he finished doing this did he stand up. Almost at the instant he did that, his left index finger pointed behind him as his body moved.

However, the gust of wind from his finger formed by his divine ability did not shoot outwards. Not too far away behind him was a Fire Spirit that was clearly a baby. It had its eyes wide open and was gawking at Su Ming.

This Fire Spirit was very small and did not even reach Su Ming's knees. It was crouching on the ground, without a hint of malice on its face. Instead, it was filled with curiosity.

When Su Ming looked towards it, the baby Fire Spirit looked as if it had been scared by him and immediately took a few steps back. At the same time, interest appeared on its face. This then caused it to move forward slightly. When it looked at Su Ming, its expression gradually grew gentle. There was no fear on it, only a look of ease and comfort.

This comfortable feeling allowed it to get closer to Su Ming. When it was only dozens of feet away, it moved in a flash and charged towards Su Ming. A fierce look appeared in Su Ming's eyes, but he did not dodge. He wanted to verify his guess, and so allowed the Fire Spirit to come towards him. When he saw the small Fire Spirit lying by his feet with a delighted expression on its face while hugging onto his calf and refusing to let go, a thought rose in his heart.

'Could it be that the Fire Spirits are also like the one thousand feet tall tree?'

As Su Ming contemplated it, he moved, intending to leave the crack, but the moment he moved, the baby Fire Spirit let go and swiftly returned to the spot it had been crouching in earlier. Then once it beckoned for Su Ming to come over, it moved in a flash and disappeared without a trace into the tunnel.

A pensive look appeared in Su Ming's eyes. The meaning behind the young Fire Spirit's actions was clear. It wanted him to enter the tunnel. After he pondered over it silently for a moment, Su Ming took a step forward and walked into the tunnel. When he stepped inside, he saw the small Fire Spirit waiting for him at a fork in the distance. When it saw him following, it immediately grinned and ran forward again.

Like this, Su Ming followed after the baby Fire Spirit in a place that was filled with tunnels which created a complicated maze. He continued moving as time trickled by. After about an hour, when the Fire Spirit had allowed Su Ming to approach it, he saw an incredibly large and spacious underground cave!

This was a place that was several tens of thousands of feet tall. It was dark in the area, Su Ming could clearly see hollowed pits all over the ground; there were countless caves on the walls. If he was to describe this underground world as a maze, then this was surely its core.

In silence, Su Ming stared at a skeleton leaning against the wall of the cave on the ground beneath him. Only half of that skeleton remained, but Su Ming saw... a long spear that the skeleton held in its hand!

The spear was purple at first, but when he took a few closer looks, he saw it turn black, as if it was occasionally changing between black and purple.

Near the skeleton were two old Fire Spirits. They were clearly very old and were sitting cross-legged like cultivators. Between them was a chessboard with a couple chess pieces on it. The two Fire Spirits... were clearly playing chess!

The baby Fire Spirit was crouching beside the chessboard and beckoning Su Ming to come to its side.

Su Ming focused. As he pondered over it, he moved. Since he had already come to this place, then he might as well get to the bottom of it. When he approached the

chessboard between the two old Fire Spirits, his gaze first swept past the creatures, but they did not seem to have noticed his arrival. They did not even lift their heads, but continued moving the chess pieces about the chessboard while contemplating their next moves.

This scene was incredibly bizarre. In silence, Su Ming looked over the chessboard.

This was a board game he had never seen before. There were only ten chess pieces scattered over it. Five of them were gray, and four of them were white. There was only one that was black.

No matter how he looked at it, that black chess piece looked as if it had appeared out of nowhere and gave off an incredibly discordant feeling. After all, nine was the peak of all numbers, so the additional black piece gave the entire chessboard a feeling as if a powerful sense of slaughter was contained within it.

Four white chess pieces looked as if they had surrounded the black piece so that they could kill it in order to restore harmony to the chessboard.

Su Ming stared at it. When his gaze landed on the black piece, he frowned.

Time trickled by slowly, and after a long moment, the old Fire Spirit on the right side of the chessboard let out a sigh filled with an ancient air.

Chapter 1000 Then Let's Fight!

The old Fire Spirit who had sighed shook his head and mumbled under his breath, "Why is it like this?"

"That's right, why is it this way?" The Fire Spirit sitting by the left side of the chessboard revealed anguish.

"You are Su Xuan Yi's son and an Abyss Builder, so could you tell me why this game turned out like this?" The Fire Spirit on the right of the chessboard lifted his head and for the first time cast his gaze on Su Ming.

At the instant he looked over, Su Ming's heart shuddered. This old Fire Spirit's eyes might seem clouded, but there was an indescribably fierce look in his eyes. In fact, there was even a type of mighty pressure in that gaze. That mighty pressure was even more powerful than that of Dust Burners' Progenitor. Su Ming could sense that faint, indistinct cracks had immediately started appearing in the space around the area when the Fire Spirit looked over.

This was... an Art governing the laws of fate!

"What is this game?" Su Ming asked.

He was not surprised by the fact that he was recognized. He could tell that these two old Fire Spirits were the ones that Dust Burners' Progenitor had said possessed intelligence and incredibly great power, but who did not wish to leave the fifth kiln to become part of Dust Burners. They obeyed the ancient promise and acted as guardians in the fifth kiln.

Since the one thousand feet tall tree could recognize him and the Fire Spirits completely ignored him when they saw him, it was not surprising that the two powerful Fire Spirits who possessed intelligence could recognize him.

"It is a game Abyss Builders' Progenitor played with Su Xuan Yi in the fifth kiln when the fifth True World was surrounded and attacked by the four Great True Worlds. He then left the fifth kiln and fought against the enemies in the world outside.

"Before he left, he let out a long string of laughter... and shook his head..."

Su Ming's expression was calm. He had experienced far too many things. At that moment, he stared in silence at the chessboard, especially that black piece. Time trickled by slowly, and it continued flowing away until a long, long had time passed.

"Even you don't understand it..." The old Fire Spirit to the right of the chessboard shook his head and sighed.

Su Ming did not speak. He only stared at the chessboard. Gradually, the Fire Spirits returned to the underground cave from the world outside. They were roaring when they returned, but once they entered the spacious underground cave, they fell silent and crouched down in the area around.

More of them came back as time passed. When all the Fire Spirits returned, they were once more densely packed in the place, illuminating the area by the faint light coming from the fire around their bodies.

Two of them were very tall, and they possessed power that was nearly that of Almighties in Mastery Realm. The Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor was captured in their hands. He was shuddering with fear on his face, but when he saw Su Ming in the distance, he was stunned.

Su Ming lifted his head and said softly, "This game is very easy to understand,"

His words immediately attracted the gazes of the two Fire Spirits.

"Have the both of you never left the fifth kiln? And did you gain your power not because of any form of training in the path of cultivation but because you naturally gained it as

time passed after you gained intelligence?" Su Ming swept his gaze past the two old Fire Spirits.

"What do you mean?" The Fire Spirit to the left of the chessboard spoke hoarsely after remaining silent for a moment.

"There are nine worlds in this universe, so it's clear that nine is the peak of all numbers, but there are not just nine worlds on the chessboard. Instead, a black piece was added to it, causing this game to no longer be in harmony. The signs of chaos had appeared within it.

"The additional black piece should be the Abyss Builders. More accurately speaking, it was once the Abyss Builders' Progenitor," Su Ming said calmly. There was a sentimental tone in his voice that no one could detect. He lifted his right hand and lifted the black piece from the chessboard.

Once it was taken away, a harmonious air immediately radiated off the layout of the chessboard. Five gray and four white pieces. Albeit filled with a fragmented and incomplete air, it still gave off a feeling of a complete universe.

"These should be the nine worlds in the universe. These four white pieces are the four Great True Worlds, and the five gray pieces are the five Great True Worlds that were once destroyed and are now in the void." Su Ming shook his head, then put down the black piece in his hand back to its original spot.

"The Fifth True World... is not one of the nine worlds in this universe," Su Ming said softly after lowering his head. In truth, he had come to understand this earlier, but only then was he certain of his guess. The Fifth True World... was the fifth, and also the tenth.

"This game is the epiphany of Abyss Builders' Progenitor. He laughed because he was proud of himself, and he shook his head because he was filled with regret. He was proud that he disturbed the game, and regretful because he did not manage to complete it.

"He left this game... for Su Xuan Yi, because he wanted Su Xuan Yi to continue and finish the game," Su Ming's stated calmly, his expression not changing.

"Then what did you see?" the old Fire Spirit to the right of the chessboard suddenly asked.

Su Ming stayed silent. After a long while, he sighed. "He wants me to complete the game."

The secrets of the Fifth True World were revealed before his eyes when he least expected it.

When he thought about it carefully, if he connected all the clues he discovered in the past, then the outline of the string would form a secret that no longer was something complicated.

There was nothing worth hiding about this secret either. The four Great True Worlds surrounding and attacking the Fifth True World in the past had always been a fact.

Perhaps these two old Fire Spirits truly did not understand it, but there was also a possibility that they understood it...

If they really did not understand it, then it would be because they had never walked out of the fifth kiln. Perhaps they did not know that there were worlds and disasters existing in the Cultivation Worlds outside.

Worlds possessed Essences of Worlds. It could make a limited number of cultivators become Lords of World Planes. It could be described as a place with only a certain amount of fixed spots. Once they were occupied, other people could either leave to search for other worlds to obtain their acknowledgement, or kill the current holders and snatch their spots.

Beside these, there were no other options. Unless they could endure having their cultivation base eternally remain at one level, they had to choose one of the two options.

As they trained and obtained the acknowledgement of ten thousand Essences of Worlds, they could reach Plane Kalpa Realm. Once they surpassed this Realm, they would reach Lunar Kalpa Realm, and as they continued gathering their power, they would reach Solar Kalpa Realm.

This was the law of the universe. All lives could only practice cultivation if they obeyed this law... Su Ming had been uncertain about the Fifth True World previously, after he gained his understanding about his inborn ability of an Abyss Builder.

This inborn ability was blatant robbery. It was a domineering, malicious ability, a madness that ignored laws and stood above them. He did not need Essences of Worlds, and neither did he need to fuse with ten thousand worlds to reach Plane Kalpa Realm, because his ability to Possess others could surpass everything.

It was due to the uncertainty towards this inborn ability that Su Ming... had formed guesses towards the Fifth True World in the bottom of his heart.

He could already imagine that Abyss Builders' Progenitor was the prodigy of his generation. With his inborn divine ability, he could Possess all living beings, overturn the universe, ignore rules, and reach an incredibly terrifying state.

Because of that, he would naturally attract the other powerful warriors' attention and bring about the disaster of death on himself. It seemed to make sense if that was the case.

However, there was always a question in Su Ming's heart. If he could solve it, he would be able to understand what had happened.

The stronger Abyss Builders' Progenitor became, the more of a threat he posed to others. However, this was not enough for the four Great True Worlds to work together to surround and destroy all living beings in the Fifth True World. They also nearly killed all the Abyss Builders, with even Su Ming not escaping from being cursed when he was just a baby in his mother's womb.

This... was slightly illogical.

Unless Abyss Builders' Progenitor did something that angered the heavens and all lives in the universe, forcing the other four Great True Worlds to attack... But with the power and wisdom Abyss Builders' Progenitor possessed, how could it have been possible for him not to see the end result of his actions. How could it be possible that he would do something that would incite such wrath in the four Great True Worlds that it could not be resolved?

'There's another possibility...'

Su Ming lifted his head. He looked at the walls of the cave above him. There was a hint of deep emotion in his eyes. He remembered the Duke of Crimson Flame once mentioning that Abyss Builders' Progenitor was only half a step away from becoming the supreme, unparalleled existence in the world. He might have been half a step away, but his offensive power back then had already been sufficient for him to fight against two supreme existences!

The Duke of Crimson Flame might only have been in Lunar Kalpa Realm, but during that generation, cultivators in Lunar Kalpa Realm could see far ahead down the path of cultivation. The supreme existence he mentioned was a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, but once Su Ming came to understand the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, he understood that those in Mastery Realm were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, and those in Death Realm were also the same. In fact, even Sublime Paragons could be said to have been born from Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, but different Realms meant a difference between heaven and earth.

If that was the case, then it would mean that there was a high possibility that that supreme existence... was a Sublime Paragon, which would also mean that Abyss Builders' Progenitor had only been half a step away from becoming a Sublime Paragon!

However, his offensive power had already been great enough for him to fight against two Sublime Paragons!!

'This possibility is... No matter what path of cultivation we practice, there will always be a checkpoint. Breaking through this checkpoint is the same as the Essences of Worlds all lives in the world practice. It is in a fixed position.

'Every single world out of the nine worlds in the universe can only have one Sublime Paragon. This is the law.

'Which is why there are only four Sublime Paragons in the four Great True Worlds. They stand above Kalpa Lords like Dao Chen. If the Fifth True World is one of the nine worlds in the universe, then the matter of it being destroyed would not have happened.

'But the Fifth True World was not one of the nine worlds in the universe. Because of it, once Abyss Builders' Progenitor became a Sublime Paragon, one of the four Sublime Paragons in the four Great True Worlds would definitely die!

'There were only four spots, and they had already been occupied, but then came a person who became a great threat to the four... Abyss Builders' Progenitor!'

Su Ming stayed silent. This was his guess, but he was quite certain that it... was the real reason behind why the Fifth True World was destroyed.

He sighed softly, then lowered his head. He looked at the black piece on the chessboard, then after he remained silent for a moment, a bright spark appeared in his eyes. He lifted his right hand and picked up the black piece once again.

Su Ming did not want to take this path at first, but he knew that it did not matter whether it was Su Xuan Yi or he himself, as long as they took that one step, they would definitely fall to the same fate as Abyss Builders' Progenitor.

If that was the case...

"Then let's fight!"

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. He clenched his right fist, and the black piece disappeared from his palm.

Chapter 1001 Zhu You Cai

At the instant the black piece disappeared from Su Ming's palm, the two old Fire Spirits sitting on the left and right of the chessboard exchanged glances before lowering their heads. Their eyelids fell shut.

At the same time, the other Fire Spirits around the area also crouched down and looked like they were falling into sleep again. There was not a hint of aversion in them towards Su Ming standing there, and neither did they pay any attention to him.

Su Ming swept his gaze across the area, until eventually his eyes landed on the half of the skeleton lying against the wall not too far away. He also stared at the long spear it held in its hands, and his eyes flashed with light.

"This person came ages ago. He killed seven powerful warriors in succession, and even the two of us were not his opponent... In the end, we had to have our people offer up their lives to activate three-tenths of the fire in the fifth kiln to refine him alive...

"But this person was so strong that this was only enough to melt half of his body and seal his soul in this place. And this happened just because he already harbored the desire to die in his heart, or else... if he had wanted to leave, we would not have been able to make him stay.

"The long spear in his hands is dyed with a large amount of Fire Spirits' life force. If you're not worried that this person will one day be resurrected and rush out of this place, you can take away the spear."

The old Fire Spirit's voice echoed in the cave. Su Ming stared at the remaining half of the skeleton, and after a period of pensive silence, he walked over.

When he came beside the skeleton, he cast a few scrutinizing glances at it, and eventually became certain that this person... was not Lie Shan Xiu!

In truth, when he saw this skeleton, an assumption had formed in his heart. After all, Lie Shan Xiu had a spear named Undertaker of Evil's Spear. Su Ming had received an imitation of it in the past, but he then remembered that the real Undertaker of Evil's Spear was under the imperial city in the land of Berserkers. It was used to suppress evil, so Lie Shan Xiu should not have taken it away.

At the Su Ming observed the skeleton carefully, his assumption disappeared from his mind. His gaze landed on the long spear that alternated between black and purple, he lifted his right hand to grab it.

The instant Su Ming touched it, a thick murderous aura spread out from the spear with a bang. It traveled up Su Ming's right hand and charged into his body. Within an instant, it filled him up. The murderous aura was so strong that as it traveled through him, it turned into a wave of impact that went surging to his brain.

Under this impact, an absent-minded look appeared in Su Ming's eyes. Blurry pictures flashed through his mind. Those pictures seemed to be the spear's memories, and they were all revealed before Su Ming's eyes.

Within one picture was a middle-aged man dressed in black with a long spear in his hand. The place where he stood was the underground cave. There was no expression on the man's face, but there was no longer any attachment towards life in his eyes, either. There were countless Fire Spirits surrounding him, and there were nine huge Fire Spirits exuding the presence of Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death fighting against him.

There was no expression on his face, but with each spear thrust, the earth would move, and the mountains would tremble. As the Fire Spirits died one by one, they began to chat. Before the man's eyes, the spirits began aging, and as the ground rumbled under his feet, an endless sea of fire gushed out of the land. That sea of fire... instantly submerged the middle-aged man.

The picture changed. The middle-aged man appeared in a world where the sky was blue, but once he pierced through it, it turned black. The hundreds of living creatures on the ground collapsed and died. It could be seen that the world where he was located was still a dimension in the fifth kiln.

A third picture appeared, and it portrayed a galaxy. Su Ming could see that before the middle-aged man was an endless sea of fire gushing out of the fifth kiln. Clearly, this time, the memory he saw was the one before the middle-aged man had stepped into the fifth kiln.

These pictures were flashbacks that were sketching out the man's memories. They were a recollection kept by the spear.

A fourth picture appeared in Su Ming's mind. It was set... within the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It was the galaxy in which the four Great True Worlds used to keep watch over the barren lands. Even though Su Ming did not know to which true world the man belonged, he saw five-colored light on the middle-aged man's hands turn into a rope that bound his hands. There were nearly one hundred runic symbols surrounding him as if they were sealing him. Behind him were seven old men. They looked at the bound man with complicated expressions on their faces, their heads lowered to bow to him.

The man turned around. There was a hint of a defeat and grief on his face. He lowered his head to look at his bound hands. When he relaxed them slightly, Su Ming saw that there was a faint red medicinal core between them. The middle-aged man clenched his fists tightly, then walked into the distance.

The fifth picture allowed Su Ming to see a galaxy with which he was incredibly familiar. The color of that galaxy was not black, but red!

The middle-aged man held the long spear in this galaxy. Soon, he let out a string of shrill and forlorn sounding laughter before he rushed towards a bald teenager ahead of him.

This teenager was dressed in a blood-red long robe. He did not seem old, but there was an indescribable ancient air about him. He stared at the middle-aged man coldly. After just a lift of his right hand, the middle-aged man coughed up blood as he tumbled back.

"Are you done fooling around?" The teenager's voice was calm, and there was a dignified air within it that signified someone who regarded himself as a supreme entity.

"I'd rather not learn the Extermination Dao and enter Death Realm!" the middle-aged man roared and charged forward in a mad dash again.

The picture changed, the sixth picture appearing in Su Ming's mind. In it was a cultivation planet. The sky was still red, but the middle-aged man was now on the ground. In his arms was a woman's corpse. Tears trickled down his cheeks as he roared at the sky.

The woman's corpse slowly disintegrated, until she turned into a faint red medicinal core!

At the same time, the teenager in red walked calmly into the picture. He picked up the medicinal core and handed it to the middle-aged man.

"Eat it. When you do, you can practice Sacred Yin's Extermination Dao. Once I take that one step forward, it does not matter whether I'll succeed or not, you will still become the next Kalpa Lord of Sacred Yin World."

When Su Ming heard this, his entire body shuddered, but he did not let go of the spear in his hand. Instead, he gripped it tighter before slowly lifting it up, slowly extracting it from the skeleton's palm.

Immediately after, the picture in his mind changed again, and the seventh picture appeared. This time, the teenager in red stood in a world with birds chirping and flowers blooming. Before him was a child of about eight or nine years old. That boy knelt under the teenager's feet, and with his young voice, he said...

"Master."

Su Ming opened his eyes swiftly and looked at the half of the skeleton before slowly bringing the spear in his hand before him. The hand which the skeleton used to hold the spear was lifted up high as well when Su Ming raised the spear. If anyone saw this, it would seem as if the skeleton himself had lifted his hand to give Su Ming the spear in his hand.

When the skeleton let go of his grip and Su Ming held the purplish black long spear completely by himself, it shone and disappeared into his hand. However, a purple and black ring appeared on Su Ming's right index finger. With a swing of his arm, that ring immediately disappeared, hidden away.

After a period of silence, Su Ming took a few steps back, wrapped his fist in his palm, then bowed deeply towards the skeleton.

He knew the reason behind why this person longed for death, which was mentioned by the Fire Spirits just then. He was the Sovereign of True Sacred Yin World and was the disciple of Sacred Yin's Kalpa Lord. If everything had went smoothly, this person would have become the next Sacred Yin's Kalpa Lord.

But during this process, an accident happened. His wife passed away, and it was due to the Master he idolized since he was young. His body was exiled to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, but his soul had already died a long time ago when the woman in his arms closed her eyes.

Su Ming looked at the skeleton in front of him. He did not even know his name, but he knew that a person who could enter Death Realm through the Extermination Dao... was definitely an Almighty in Life Realm. This sort of powerful warrior... was surely a shocking person whose name rang through the galaxy.

There was practically no force in the universe that could make a person who reached Life Realm die. Even if there was, it was definitely rare and hard to find. That was why he was still alive, even if there was only half of his skeleton remaining.

However, Su Ming did not sense this person's soul from the skeleton or the long spear in his hand. The memories he saw just then were only some residual ones left behind in the spear. When it disappeared into Su Ming's hand, the residual memories also vanished.

After bowing once, Su Ming lifted his head, then turned around to walk towards the exit. The Fire Spirits continued crouching in the area, their eyes closing slowly, as if they wanted to fall asleep again. Su Ming took a few steps forward, and after a pause, he looked at Flame Fiends' Progenitor who was looking at him anxiously.

"That Nascent Divinity is mine," Su Ming said calmly.

When he said these words, the Fire Spirit holding onto the Nascent Divinity of Flame Fiends' Progenitor let go of it. Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately flew to Su Ming's side, who lifted his feet and turned into a long arc that charged towards the exit. Flame Fiends' Progenitor followed after him closely. At that moment, there was no longer any hint of hostility in him towards Su Ming.

The two of them moved through the tunnels underground extremely quickly. After some time, Su Ming rushed out of the crack in the ground.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor followed behind him. Once he rushed out, he looked at the crack in the ground with lingering fear in his eyes, then looked at Su Ming. HE wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to him.

"Thank you, fellow Daoist."

Su Ming turned around and cast Flame Fiends' Progenitor a look. He did not speak, but instead lifted his head to look at the sky. He scanned the area with his Atman and found that he could not find the body of the supreme treasure in this world. Clearly, they had already escaped from Fire Spirits' pursuit and went into another dimension.

However, with the bald crane, Xu Hui, and Progenitor Long Hai around, Su Ming would be able to immediately notice them the moment they both entered the same dimension.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor hesitated for a moment, but did not dare to mention the matter about them agreeing that he would have the white-robed teenager's physical body. He was incredibly weakened at the moment, and he was worried that if he brought this up, he would displease Su Ming.

"Let's go."

Su Ming had already found the exit with his Atman, and with one move, he charged towards it. Flame Fiends' Progenitor quickly followed behind him, and after some time, they arrived at the distorted region which was the exit. They stepped in and disappeared from the world.

What the two of them did not know was that at the instant Su Ming took the purple-black spear from the skeleton's hands, the big and ferocious looking Zhu You Cai shuddered in another dimension. He slowly lifted his head and looked into the distance, his face filled with complicated emotions.